0112-0187 – Tatian – Diatesseron

The Diatessaron Of Tatian

this file has been downloaded from http://www.ccel.org/ccel/schaff/anf09.html
THE DIATESSARON OF TATIAN

BY

REV. HOPE W. HOGG, B.D.

Introduction.

———

The aim of the following introductory paragraphs is neither to furnish a detailed restatement of facts already known, nor to offer an independent contribution to the discussion of the problems that arise, although in other circumstances such an attempt might be made with advantage. All that is needed and practicable here is to describe briefly, if possible, the nature of the connection between the English treatise forming the next part of this volume and the ancient work known as the Diatessaron of Tatian; and then to indicate in a few words some of the more important or interesting features of the work itself, and some of the historical and other problems that are in one way or another connected with it.

1 The Text Translated.—What is offered to the reader is a translation into English of an Arabic text, published at Rome in 1888, in a volume entitled in Arabic Diatessaron, which Titianus Compiled from the Four Gospels, with the alternative Latin title, Tatiani Evangeliorum Harmoniae, Arabice. The Roman volume consists of two parts—the text, covering a little over 209 very clearly printed Arabic pages, and a Latin half, comprising a scholarly introduction (pp. v.–xv.), a Latin translation (pp. 1–99), and a table showing the order in which the passages taken from the gospels occur in the text. The editor is P. Agostino Ciasca, a well known Orientalist, “scriptor” at the Vatican Library.

2 Former Translations.—In his Introduction (p. xiv. f.) Ciasca explains that in his translation he aimed at preserving quantum, salva fidelitate, integrum fuit, indolem stylique Clementinae Vulgate. This Latin version was in its turn translated into English by the Rev. J. Hamlyn Hill, B.D., and published in 1894 in a volume entitled The Earliest Life of Christ, with an interesting introduction and a number of valuable appendices. The ms. of Mr. Hill’s translation of the Latin of Ciasca was compared with the Arabic original by Mr. G. Buchanan Gray, M.A., lecturer in Hebrew and the Old Testament in Mansfield College, Oxford.
3 The Present Translation.—The translation offered here is quite independent of either of these two. Ciasca’s Latin was seldom consulted, except when it was thought the Arabic might perhaps be obscured by a misprint. After the translation was completed, Hill’s English was compared with it to transfer Mr. Hill’s valuable system of references to the margin of this work, and to lessen the risk of oversights passing the last revision unnoticed. In two or three cases this process led to the adoption of a different construction, and in a few of the more awkward passages a word was borrowed as being less harsh than that which had originally been written. Speaking generally, the present version appears to differ from Mr. Hill’s in adhering more closely to the original.\(^ {17} \)

4 The Arabic Text.—Only two Arabic mss. are known to exist. Ciasca tells us (p. xiv.) that he took as the basis of his text that ms. which is more careful in its orthography, the Cod. Vat. Arab. No. 14. He, however, printed at the foot of the page the variants of the other ms., and supplied from it two lacunae in the Cod. Vat.,\(^ {18} \) substituted its readings for those of the Cod. Vat. where he thought them preferable, and followed its testimony in omitting two important passages.\(^ {19} \) Here and there Ciasca has emended the text, but he does not profess to have produced a critical edition.\(^ {20} \)

5 The Arabic mss.—Unfortunately, the present writer has not had an opportunity of examining these two mss.; but they have been described at some length by Ciasca; Codex XIV. in Pitra’s Analecta Sacra, iv., 465 ff., and the other codex in the volume with which we are dealing, p. vi. ff. I. The former, which we shall call the Vatican ms. (in Ciasca’s footnotes it is called A), was brought to the Vatican from the East by Joseph S. Assemani\(^ {21} \) about A.D. 1719. It was described by Stephen E. Assemani, Rosenmüller, and Akerblad, and then at length by Ciasca, to whose account the reader must be referred for the details. It consists of 123 folios, of which the first seven are somewhat spoiled, and of which two are missing,\(^ {24} \) and is supposed by Ciasca, from the character of the writing, and from the presence of certain Coptic letters\(^ {25} \) by the first hand, to have been written in Egypt. S. Assemani assigned it to the twelfth century, and Ciasca accepts his verdict, while Akerblad says the thirteenth or fourteenth century. The text of the ms. is pretty fully vocalised, but there are few diacritical points. There are marginal notes, some of them by a later hand,\(^ {26} \) which Ciasca classifies as (1) emendations, (2) restorations, (3) explanations. II. The second ms., which we shall call the Borgian (in Ciasca’s footnotes it is called B), was brought to the Borgian Museum from Egypt in August, 1886. It has at the end the following inscription in Arabic: “A present from Halim Dos Ghali, the Copt, the Catholic, to the Apostolic See, in the year of Christ 1886.”\(^ {27} \) Antonius Morcos, Visitor Apostolic of the Catholic Copts, when, in the beginning of 1886, he was shown and informed about the Vatican ms., told of this other one and was the means of its being sent to Rome. The Borgian ms., which Ciasca refers to the fourteenth century, consists of 355

---

17 For further explanation of the method followed see 20.
18 See notes to § 7, 47, and § 52, 36, of the present translation.
19 See below, 12, (2).
20 See also below, 6, and 20.
21 Bibl. Or., i., 619.
24 See below, § 7, 47, note, and § 52, 36, note.
25 See below, § 28, 43, note.
26 See below, foot-notes, passim.
27 The first leaf bears a more pretentious Latin inscription, quoted by Ciasca, p. vi.
folios. Folios 1–85 contain an anonymous preface on the gospels, briefly described by Ciasca, who, however, does not say whether it appears to have been originally written in Arabic or to have been translated into that language. With folios 96b, 97a, which are reproduced in phototype in Ciasca’s edition, begins the Introductory Note given in full at the beginning of the present translation. The text of the Diatessaron ends on folio 353a, but is followed by certain appendices, for which see below, §55, 17, note. This ms. is complete, and has, as we shall see, in some respects a better text, though it is worse in its orthography than the Vatican ms.

6 Condition of the Arabic Text.—Ciasca’s text does not profess to be critically determined, for which purpose a more careful study of each of the mss. and an estimate of their respective texts would be indispensable. Although the Borgian ms. is supposed by Ciasca to be a century or two later than the Vatican ms. it is clearly not a copy of the latter, for not only does it sometimes offer more original readings, but, as we shall see, its text in some points coincides more exactly in scope with the original work. The list of various readings supplied by Ciasca, which is equal to about a fifth or a quarter of the text itself, ought to yield, on being analysed, some canons of criticism. The footnotes of the present edition are enough to show that a number of the peculiar features of Ciasca’s text do not belong to the original Arabic ms.; and further study would dispose of still more. On the other hand, there are unfortunately some indications that the common ancestor of both mss., though perhaps less than two centuries removed from the original, was not the original itself, and therefore emendation may be necessary even where both mss. agree. From first to last it has to be borne in mind that a great deal of work was done at Arabic versions of the gospels, and the text of the copy from which our two mss. are descended may already have suffered from contact with other versions; while the special activity of the thirteenth century may have left its mark in some places on the text of the Borgian ms., supposing it to be chronologically the later.

7 Origin of the Arabic Text.—If some of the uncouthness of the Arabic text is due to corruption in the course of transmission, much is also due to its being not an original work, but a translation. That it is, in the main, a translation from Syriac is too obvious to need proof. The Introductory Notice and Subscription to the Borgian ms., moreover, expressly state that the work was translated by one Abu’l Faraj ‘Abdulla ibn-at-Tayyib, an “excellent and learned priest,” and the inferiority of parts of the translation, and entire absence of any confirmatory evidence, hardly suffice to refute this assertion. Still, the Borgian ms. is a late witness, and although it most probably preserves a genuine tradition as to the author of our work, its statement need not therefore necessarily be correct in every point.

---

28 Can this be a misprint for 95?
29 See below, 13.
30 He does not state, in so many words, that the list is absolutely exhaustive.
31 See, e.g., below, § 13, 42, note, and § 14, 43, note.
33 cf. the foot-notes passim, e.g., § 13, 14, § 14, 24.
34 See below, note to Subscription.
35 See a glaring case in § 52, 11.
36 The references to the readings of the Diatessaron in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s own commentary on the gospels (see next note) are remarkably impersonal for one who had made or was to make a translation of it.
8 The Arabic Editor and his Method.—Ibn-at-Tayyib (d. 1043) is a well known man, a Nestorian monk and scholar, secretary to Elias I., Patriarch of Nisibis (for references to sources see, e.g., Ciasca’s Introduction, p. xi. f. and Steinschneider’s long note in his Polemische und apologetische Lit. in Arabische Sprache, pp. 52–55). As we are here concerned with him simply as a link in the chain connecting our present work with its original source, the only point of interest for us is the method he followed in producing it. Did he prepare an independent translation or did he make use of existing Arabic versions, his own or others? Until this question which space forbids us to discuss here, has been more thoroughly investigated, it must suffice to say that in view of the features in the present text that have not yet been shown to exist in any other Arabic version, it is still at least a tenable hypothesis that Ibn-at-Tayyib’s ms. constituted to a considerable extent a real translation rather than a sort of Arabic parallel to the Codex Fuldensis (see below, 12).

9 The Syriac Text Translated.—The eleventh century ms. of Ibn-at-Tayyib, could we reach it, would bring us face to face with the more interesting question of the nature of his Syriac original. The Subscription to the Borgian ms. states, probably copying the statement from its exemplar, that this was a Syriac ms. in the handwriting of ‘Isa ibn-‘Ali al Motatabbib, pupil of Honain ibn Ishak. This Honain was a famous Arabic physician and medical writer of Bagdad (d. 873), whose school produced quite a number of translations and translators, among whom Ibn-‘Ali, supposed to be identical with the Syriac lexicographer of the same name, is known to have had a high place. The Syriac ms., therefore, that Ibn-at-Tayyib translated takes us back to about the year 900. But the Subscription to each of our mss. states that the work ended is the gospel called Diatessaron, compiled from the four gospels by Titianus; while the Introductory Note to the Borgian ms. adds that this Titianus was a Greek. The next step, therefore, is to inquire whether any traces exist of such a Syriac work, or any statements by which we can check the account just given of it.

10 Other Traces of a Syriac Text.—No copy of a Syriac Diatessaron has yet been shown to have survived. A number of quotations from such a work have, however, been found in a Syriac commentary on the New Testament by Isho’dad of Merv (circ. 852), a contemporary of Honain,

---

37 A specially important part of the general question is this, What are the mutual relations of the following: (1) a supposed version of at least Matthew and John made from the Syriac by Ibn-at-Tayyib, mentioned by Ibn-al-‘Assal in the Preface to his scholarly recension of the gospels (ms. numbered Or. 3382 in Brit. Mus., folio 384b) and used by him in determining his text; (2) the gospel text interwoven with the commentary of Ibn-at-Tayyib on the gospels, a commentary which De Slane says the author wrote in Syriac and then translated into Arabic; (3) our present work. Of ms. testifying to No. 1 we have some dating from the time of Ibn-al-‘Assal himself; of No. 2 we have, in addition to others, an eleventh-century ms. in Paris, described by De Slane (catalogue No. 85) as being “un volume dépareillé du ms. original de l’ouvrage”; of No. 3 we have of course the Vatican and Borgian mss. What is the mutual relation of these texts; were any two of them identical? The Brit. Mus. ms. of the second has many points of contact with the third, but is dated 1805 A.D. Does the older Paris ms. stand more or less closely related? Did Ibn-at-Tayyib himself really translate any or all of these texts, or did he simply select or edit them? Space does not permit us to point out, far less to discuss, the various possibilities.

38 The text is given below in full at its proper place.

39 Prof. Gottheil, indeed, announced in 1892 in the Journal of Biblical Literature (vol. xi., pt. i., p. 71) that he had been privately informed of the existence of a complete copy of the Syriac Diatessaron. Unfortunately, however, as he has kindly informed me, he has reluctantly come to the conclusion that the ms. in question, which is not yet accessible, is “nothing more than the commentary of Isho’dad” mentioned in the text. A similar rumor lately circulated probably originated simply in the pamphlet of Goussen mentioned in the next note. S. Bäumer, on the other hand, in his article, “Tatians Diatessaron, seine bisher. Lit. u. die Reconstruction des Textes nach einer neuentdeckten Handschrift” (Literarischer Handweiser, 1890, 153–169) which the present writer has not been able to see, perhaps refers simply to the Borgian ms.

Attention was called to these by Prof. Isaac H. Hall and R. J. H. Gottheil (Journ. of Bibl. Lit., x., 153 ff.; xi., 68 ff.; then by Prof. J. R. Harris (Contemp. Rev., Aug., 1895, p. 271 ff.); and, more fully, Fragments of the Com. of Ephr. Syr. on the Diatess., London, 1895) and by Goussen (Studia Theologica, fasc. i., Lips., 1895).
Ibn-'Ali’s teacher. The value of these extracts is apparent, for they take us back one generation earlier than Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Syriac exemplar. More important still, they do not entirely agree with the text of our Arabic version. To solve the problem thus raised, we must examine some of the statements about the Diatessaron to be found in ecclesiastical writers.

11 Statements about the Diatessaron.—One of the most widely known is that of Isho’dad himself, who, in his Preface to the Gospel of Mark, says: “Tatian, disciple of Justin, the philosopher and martyr, selected from the four gospels, and combined and composed a gospel, and called it Diatessaron, i.e., the Combined, and upon this gospel Mar Ephraem commented.” Dionysius Bar Salibi (twelfth century) repeats each of these phrases, adding, “Its commencement was, ‘In the beginning was the Word.’” These statements identify the author of the Diatessaron with a man otherwise known, and tell us that the great Syrian father Ephraem (d. 373) wrote a commentary on it. Unfortunately, no Syriac ms. of Ephraem’s work is known to have survived; but quotations from it, or allusions to it, are being found in other Syriac writers. One further reference will suffice for the present. Theodoret, Bishop of Cyprus, four hundred years before Isho’dad, wrote thus in his book on Heresies (written in 453): “Tatian the Syrian….This [writer] also composed the gospel which is called Diatessaron, cutting out the genealogies and whatever other passages show that the Lord was born of the seed of David according to the flesh.” Before examining the testimonials we have now adduced, we must notice certain more remote sources of information.

12 Non-Syriac Texts of the Diatessaron.—Although Ephraem’s Syriac commentary on the Diatessaron is for the present lost, there is an Armenian version of it extant in two mss. dating from about the time of Bar Salibi and our Vat. ms. A Latin translation of this work, published in 1876 by Moesinger, formed the main basis of Zahn’s attempt to reconstruct the Diatessaron. Appendix X in Hill’s Diatessaron (pp. 334–377) contains an English translation of the texts commented on by Ephraem, made from Moesinger’s Latin, but collated with the Armenian by Professor J. Armitage Robinson, of Cambridge. A comparison of this document with our Arabic text shows a remarkable agreement in the order and contents, but just as remarkable a lack of agreement in the kind of text presented. The same phenomenon is met with when we compare our Arabic text with a document that carries us back three hundred years before the time of Isho’dad, and therefore more than six hundred years before the Armenian ms.—the Codex Fuldensis of the Vulgate. This ms. contains an arrangement of the gospel matter that its discoverer and publisher, Bishop Victor of Capua (d. 554), rightly concluded must represent the Diatessaron of Tatian, but

---

41 Prof. Harris promises an edition of this commentary.
42 Harris, Fragments, p. 14, where the Syriac text is quoted.
43 Bib. Or., ii., 159 f. Most of them are repeated again by Bar Hebraeus (d. 1286), although some confusion is produced by his interweaving some phrases from Eusebius of Cesarea. (Bib. Or., i., 57 f., and a longer quotation in English in Contemp. Rev., Aug., 1895, p. 274 f.)
44 Lagarde’s statement (Nachrichten von der Königl. Gesellsch. der Wiss., etc., zu Göttingen, 1891, No. 4, p. 153) that a ms. had been discovered, appears to have been unfounded. Prof. Rahlfs of Göttingen kindly tells me that he believes this is so.
46 Published at Venice in 1836.
47 The two Armenian mss. are dated A.D. 1195.
48 Evangeli Concordantis Expositio, facta a S. Ephraemo (Ven., 1876).
49 Forschungen zur Geschichte des neutestamentlichen Kanons, I. Theil.
50 Edited by Ernestus Ranke, Marb. and Lips., 1868.
for the text of which was apparently substituted that of the Vulgate.\footnote{51} We are now ready to weigh the testimony we have gathered.\footnote{52}

13 Accretions to the Diatessaron.—The statements we are to consider are: (1) Bar Salibi’s, that Tatian’s \textit{Diatessaron} began with “In the beginning was the Word”;\footnote{53} (2) Theodoret’s, that Tatian cut out the genealogies; and (3) the same writer’s, that Tatian also cut out “whatever other passages show that the Lord was born of the seed of David according to the flesh.” Of these statements 1 conflicts with the Arabic text, which begins with Mark, and the Codex Fuldensis, which begins with Luke, but agrees with the Ephraem source; the same is true of 2; while 3 conflicts with all three texts. Our limits do not admit of our discussing these points in detail. It must suffice to say (1) that, although a more careful examination at firsthand of the introductory notices in the two Arabic mss. seems needed before one can venture to propound a complete theory, a comparison of the two texts, and a consideration of the descriptions given by Ciasca and Lagarde,\footnote{54} make it almost certain that the genuine Arabic text of Ibn-at-Tayyib began with John i. 1. Similarly the first four verses of Luke (on which see also below, § 1. 6, note) were probably not in the original text of the ms. that Victor found, for they are not mentioned in the (old) table of contents. We seem thus to detect a process of gradual accretion of material drawn from the ordinary gospel text. (2) The genealogies illustrate the same process. In the Vatican ms. they form part of the text.\footnote{55} But in the Borgian ms., although they precede the Subscription, and therefore \textit{may} have been already in the ninth century Syriac ms. used by Ibn-at-Tayyib, they are still placed by themselves, after a blank space, at the end of the volume, with a title of their own.\footnote{56} Here, therefore, we actually see stages of the process of accretion. (3) It is therefore possible that the same account must also be given of 3, although in this case we have no direct proof.

14 Passages Lost from the Diatessaron.—If the Diatessaron has thus been growing so as to represent the ordinary text of the canonical gospels more completely, we have also evidence that suggests that it has been at some time or times purged of certain features that are lacking in these canonical gospels. For one case of this kind see below, §4, 36, note.

15 Presentation of the Text of the Diatessaron.—We have observed already that the Latin, Armenian, and Arabic Diatessarons correspond pretty closely in subject matter and arrangement, but differ markedly in text. The Codex Fuldensis is really a ms. of the Vulgate, although the text that Victor found was probably somewhat different. The Armenian text differs materially from the ordinary Syriac version of the New Testament (the Peshitta), showing a marked connection with another type of Syriac text represented now by the Curetonian and Sinaitic (Lewis) mss. The Arabic text, on the other hand, almost systematically represents the Peshitta. The explanation of the condition of text in the Codex Fuldensis is obvious. On the other hand, the relationship of the

---

\footnote{51}{For other forms of the \textit{Diatessaron}, of no critical importance, see S. Hemphill, \textit{The Diatessaron of Tatian} (London, 1888), Appendix D and the refs. there.}

\footnote{52}{Further references, chiefly repetitions in one form or another of the statements we have quoted, may be found in a convenient form in Harnack, \textit{Gesch. d. altchrist. Lit. bis. Euseb.}, 493–496; cf. also the works mentioned by Hill (\textit{op. cit.}) p. 378 f.}

\footnote{53}{\textit{cf.} the words of Aphraates, senior contemporary of Ephraem: “As it is written in the beginning of the Gospel of our Vivifier: In the beginning was the Word.” (\textit{Patrol. Syr.}, pars i., tom. i., 21, lines 17–19).}

\footnote{54}{\textit{Nachrichten von der Königl. Gesellsch. der Wiss.}, etc., March 17, 1886, No. 4, p. 151 ff.}

\footnote{55}{See notes to § 1, 81, and § 4, 29.}

\footnote{56}{See note to § 55, 17.}
Armenian and Arabic texts to the original Diatessaron must be determined by weighing very multifarious evidence that cannot be even cited here (see above 6 ff.). The two texts depend, as we have seen, on late MSS. but all the earlier references and quotations go to show that the Armenian text57 stands much more closely related to the original than does the Arabic.

16 Checkered History of the Diatessaron.—What use the Arabic edition of Ibn-at-Tayyib was put to when made we do not know. ‘Abd Isha’ (d. 1318) speaks in the highest terms of Tatian’s work, saying, “…With all diligence he attended to the utmost degree to the right order of those things which were said and done by the Saviour; of his own he did not add a single saying.”58 But the leaders of the Syrian church had not always thought so. Theodoret (loc. cit.) some nine hundred years earlier had written thus: “…Even those that follow the apostolic doctrines, not perceiving the mischief of the composition,” used “the book too simply as an abridgment.” A few years earlier Rabbula, Bishop of Edessa (d. 435), had said:59 “Let the presbyters and deacons give heed that in all the churches there be provided and read a copy of the Distinct Gospel,” i.e., not the harmonized or mixed gospel. But obviously these men were trying to suppress traditional practice due to very different views. Theodoret (loc. cit.) found more than two hundred copies of the work “held in respect in the churches”; and the Doctrine of Addai (Edessa, third to fourth century) seems simply to identify the Diatessaron and the New Testament.60 Outside of the Syriac speaking churches we find no signs of any such use of the Diatessaron. It would seem, therefore, that at a quite early stage the Diatessaron was very widely if not universally read in the Syriac churches, and commented on by scholars as the gospel; that in time it fell under the condemnation of some at least of the church leaders, who made violent efforts to suppress it; that it could not be suppressed; that a commentary on it was (perhaps in the fifth century61) translated into Armenian; that it was still discussed by commentators, and new Syriac MSS. of it made in the ninth century, and thought worth the labor of reproduction in Arabic in the beginning of the eleventh century; that MSS. of the Armenian volume continued to be made down to the very end of the twelfth century, and of the Arabic edition down to the fourteenth century; but that this long life was secured at the expense of a more or less rapid assimilation of the text to that of the great Syriac Bible which from the fourth century onwards became more and more exclusively used—the Peshitta.

17 The Author of the Diatessaron.—The Diatessaron is such an impersonal work that we do not need to know very much about its compiler.62 It will suffice here to say that he tells us himself that he was born “in the land of the Assyrians,” and brought up a heathen. After travelling in search of knowledge, he settled at Rome, where he became a pupil of Justin Martyr, professed Christianity, and wrote in Greek his Address to the Greeks,63 translated in vol. iii. of the Ante-Nicene Christian Library. He was too independent in his attitude to maintain a permanent popularity, and after Justin’s death left Rome and returned to Mesopotamia. It was probably here that he issued in Syriac his most important work, the Diatessaron, which won such a warm place in the heart of the Syrian

57 The Armenian version of Ephraem is supposed to date from the fifth century.
58 Mai, Script. vet. nov. Coll., x., 191.
59 Overbeck, S. Ephraemi, etc., Opera Selecta, p. 220, lines 3–5.
60 Phillip, Doct. Add., p. 36, 15–17 [E. Tr. p. 34].
61 Moesinger, Evang. Concord., etc., p. xi.
62 The latest discussion of the question whether this really was Tatian is Mr. Rendel Harris’s article in the Contemp. Rev., Aug., 1895.
63 Best ed. by Eduard Schwartz, in Texte und Untersuchungen, IV. Band, Heft 1.
church. Among the Greek scholars, however, he became more and more regarded as a heretic, Encratite (ascetic), and Gnostic.

18 The Diatessaron as a Harmony.—Not very much need be said on this subject, as every reader can collect the facts for himself. In its present form the Harmony draws from all the four canonical gospels, and from very little else. Opinions differ as to whether it originally indicated the gospel from which any given piece was drawn, and some uncertainty must remain in special cases as to what gospel actually has been drawn upon. Professor G. F. Moore, in a very interesting article on the Diatessaron, having counted the references in the Arabic mss., states that the Arabic text contains 50 percent of Mark, 66 percent of Luke, 76.5 percent of Matthew, and 96 percent of John. The summation of his figures gives the following result: out of a total of 3780 verses in the four gospels, the Diatessaron quotes 2769 and omits 1011. As to the order in which the whole is arranged, Moore thinks that Matthew has chiefly been followed; while Zahn regards the Fourth Gospel as normative. For a specimen of the way in which words and phrases from the different gospels are woven together, we may refer to § 52, 35 ff., and the notes thereon. In the Arabic mss., and probably in the Syriac exemplar, the work is divided into fifty-four almost equal chapters, followed by one short one—a feature that agrees well with what we have learned of the work as being of old the lectionary of the Syrian church.

19 Problems Connected with the Diatessaron.—The Diatessaron opens up a very wide field of study. A few points may be here enumerated (see also above, 8, and note there). In what language was it written? On the view favoured by an increasing majority of scholars, that it was written in Syriac, was it a translation or simply a compilation? What precisely is its relation to the Syriac versions and the “Western” text generally? Then there is its bearing on the date and formation of the canonical gospels; the phenomenon of its so long supplying the place of those gospels; the analogy it presents to the Pentateuch, according to the critical view of the origin of the latter. These and other issues make the Diatessaron an important and interesting study.

20 The Present Translation.—The work of translation has been found much more tedious than was anticipated, notwithstanding the fact that considerably more than half of it is the work of my wife, which I have simply revised with special attention to the many obscurities dealt with in the footnotes. We have, however, worked so much together that it is very doubtful whether any one could assign the various parts to their respective sources. My wife also verified the Arabic references to the gospels printed on the margin to the right of the text, and prepared the Index to these references—an extremely laborious and perplexing piece of work. This Index is inserted merely for the practical purpose of enabling the reader to find any given gospel piece in the Diatessaron. When a verse is not found in the Index, an equivalent passage from some of the other gospels should be looked for. On the margin to the left of the text are indicated the pages of the Arabic text and the sections and verses in Hill’s version.

---

65 The refs., except where the foot-notes indicate otherwise, are to the verses of the English or Greek Bible. The numbers of the Arabic verse refs. (which follow the Vulgate and therefore in one or two passages differ from the English numbers by one) may, however, have been occasionally retained through oversight. It is only the name of the gospel that can possibly be ancient.
66 It may be mentioned that it has been found very convenient to mark these figures on the margin of the Arabic text. An English index (that given here, or that in Hill’s volume) can then be used for the Arabic text also.
The aim has been to make a literal translation. As two freer translations already exist, it seemed best to incline to the side of being overliteral. If, however, features due simply to Arabic idiom have been preserved, this is an oversight. Uniformity could only have been secured by devoting a much longer time to the work than the editor was able to allow. The difficulties are due to the corrupt state of the Arabic text,\textsuperscript{67} and to the awkward reproduction\textsuperscript{68} or actual misunderstanding\textsuperscript{69} of the Syriac original by the author or authors of the Arabic translation. It has been impossible to maintain consistency in dealing with these phenomena. If any rendering seem strange, it will be well to consult the Syriac versions before deciding that it is wrong. A good deal of attention, too, has to be paid to the usage of the Arabic text, which, though it has many points of contact with other Arabic versions of the gospels, e.g., the MS. described by Gildemeister (\textit{De evangg. in arab. e simp. Syr.}, 1865), is as yet for us (see above, 8) a distinct version, possessed of an individuality of its own, one pronounced feature being its very close adherence to its Syriac original. Another revision of the present translation, in the light of a fuller study of these features, would doubtless lead to changes both in the text and in the footnotes. The latter aim at preventing misunderstanding and giving some examples of the peculiarities of the text, and of the differences between the MS. To have dealt systematically with the text and various readings would have required much more time and space than was available. The consequence of this incompleteness has been some uncertainty at times what text to translate. As already stated (paragraphs 4 and 6), Ciasca’s printed text neither represents any one MS. nor professes to be based in its eclecticism on any systematic critical principles. On the whole Ciasca has here been followed somewhat mechanically in deciding what to exhibit in the text and what to relegate to the footnotes. As a rule conjectural emendations have not been admitted into the text except where the MS. readings would hardly bear translation. Italics in the text denote words supplied for the sake of English idiom; in the footnotes, quotations from the MS. It is to be noted that many linguistic usages said, for shortness, in the footnotes to be characteristic of the present work, i.e., as compared with ordinary Arabic, are common in Arabic versions. “Syriac versions” means the three (Pesh., Cur., Sin.), or as many of them as contain the passage in question; if the Peshitta alone is quoted, it may be assumed that Cur. and Sin. are missing or diverge.

In conclusion we may say that an effort has been made to preserve even the order of words; but it must be emphasized that it is very doubtful whether it is wise for any one to use the Arabic \textit{Diatessaron} for critical purposes who is not acquainted with Arabic and Syriac. The tenses, e.g., are much vaguer in Arabic than in Greek and English, and are, moreover, in this work often accommodated to Syriac idiom. The Greek and the Revised Version have been used to determine in almost every case how the vague Arabic tenses and conjunctions should be rendered. It is therefore only where it \textit{differs} from these that our translation can be quoted without investigation as giving positive evidence.

This is not a final translation. Few books have had a more remarkable literary history than the \textit{Diatessaron}, and that history is by no means done. Much careful argument will yet be devoted to it, and perhaps discoveries as important as any hitherto made are yet to shed light on the problems that encircle it. If our work can help any one to take a step in advance, we shall not regret the toil.

\textsuperscript{67} e.g., § 8, 10. For a list of suggested emendations see at end of Index.
\textsuperscript{68} e.g., § 52, 11.
\textsuperscript{69} e.g., § 45, 33.
OXFORD, 21st December, 1895.

Introductory Notes.

1. In the Borgian Ms.

In the name of the one God, the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, to him be the glory forever. We shall begin, with the help of God most high, the writing of the pure gospel, the blooming garden, called Diatessaron (a word meaning “fourfold”), the work compiled by Titianus the Greek out of the four evangelists—Matthew the elect, whose symbol is M, Mark the chosen, whose symbol is R, Luke the approved, whose symbol is K, and John the beloved, whose symbol is H. The work was translated from Syriac into Arabic by the excellent and learned priest Abu’l Faraj ‘Abdulla ibn-at-Tayyib,⁷⁰ may God grant him his favour. He began with the first of⁷¹ And he said: The Beginning⁷² of the Gospel of Jesus the Son of the living God. John: In the beginning, etc.

2. In the Vatican ms.

In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, giver of life, the God that is one in substance in his essence, and three in persons in his attributes. The first of his Gospel is He began the first of his Gospel with Mark. And he said: The Beginning⁷⁴ of the Gospel of Jesus the Son of the living God. John: In the beginning, etc.

---

⁷⁰ The ms. here has Tabib, but the name is correctly given in the Subscription (q.v.).

⁷¹ i.e., simply He began with.

⁷² The vowel signs as printed by Ciasca imply some such construction as And he said as a beginning: The Gospel, etc. But the vocalisation is of course not authoritative, and a comparison with the preface in the Vatican ms. suggests the rendering given above. The word translated Beginning in the two Introductory Notes is the very word (whichever spelling be adopted) used by Ibn-at-Tayyib himself in his comments on Mark i. (at least according to the Brit. Mus. ms.), although not in the gospel text prefixed to the Comments as it now stands, or indeed in any ms. Arabic gospel in the Brit. Mus. This would seem to militate against our theory of the original form of this much-debated passage in the Introductory Notes, as indicated by the use of small type for the later inserted phrases; and the difficulty appears at first to be increased by the following words in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s comments on Mark i. (Brit. Mus. ms., fol. 190a), and some say that the Greek citation and in the Diatessaron, which Titianus the pupil of Justianus the philosopher wrote, the quotation is not written; “Isaiah,” but, “as it is written in the prophet.” This is a remarkable statement about the Diatessaron. But the sentence is hardly grammatical. Perhaps the words printed in italics originally formed a complete sentence by themselves, possibly on the margin. If this conjecture be correct we might emend, e.g., by restoring them to the margin, and repeating the last three words or some equivalent phrase in the text. It would be interesting to know how the Paris ms. reads. See below, p. 138 (Suggested Emendations).

⁷³ Ciasca does not state whether the word John occurs here in the Borgian ms. or not.

⁷⁴ The vowel signs as printed by Ciasca imply some such construction as And he said as a beginning: The Gospel, etc. But the vocalisation is of course not authoritative, and a comparison with the preface in the Vatican ms. suggests the rendering given above. The word translated Beginning in the two Introductory Notes is the very word (whichever spelling be adopted) used by Ibn-at-Tayyib himself in his comments on Mark i. (at least according to the Brit. Mus. ms.), although not in the gospel text
The Text of the Diatessaron.

[Section I]

[1] In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and God is the [2,3] Word. This was in the beginning with God. Everything was by his hand, and [4] without him not even one existing thing was made. In him was life, and the life [5] is the light of men. And the light shineth in the darkness, and the darkness apprehended it not.

[6] There was in the days of Herod the king a priest whose name was Zacharias, of the family of Abijah; and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name [7] was Elizabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all his commands, and in the uprightness of God without reproach. And they had no son, for [9] Elizabeth was barren, and they had both advanced in age. And while he discharged [10] the duties of priest in the order of his service before God, according to the custom of the priesthood it was his turn to burn incense; so he entered the [11] temple of the Lord. And the whole gathering of the people were praying without at the [12] time of the incense. And there appeared unto Zacharias the angel of the Lord, standing [13] at the right of the altar of incense; and Zacharias was troubled when he saw him,
[14] and fear fell upon him. 89But the angel said unto him, Be not agitated. 90Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt [15] call his name John; 91and thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice [16] at his birth. 92And he shall be great before the Lord, and shall not drink wine nor strong drink, and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit93 while he is in his mother’s [17] womb. 94And he shall turn back many of the children of Israel to the Lord their [18] God. 95And he shall go before him in the spirit, and in the power of Elijah the prophet, to turn back the heart of the fathers to the sons, and those that obey not to the knowledge96 of the righteous; and to prepare for the Lord a perfect people. [19] 97And Zacharias said unto the angel, How shall I know this, since I am an old man [20] and my wife is advanced in years? 98And the angel answered and said unto him, I am Gabriel, that standeth before God; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and give [21] thee tidings of this. 99Henceforth thou shalt be speechless, and shalt not be able to speak until the day in which this shall come to pass, because thou didst not trust [22] this my word, which shall be accomplished in its time. 100And the people were standing [Arabic, p. 3] awaiting Zacharias, and they were perplexed at his delaying in the temple. [23]101And when Zacharias went out, he was not able to speak unto them: so they knew that he had seen in the temple a vision; and he made signs unto them, and [24] continued dumb. 102And when the days of his service were completed, he departed to his dwelling.

[25] 103And after those days Elizabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five [26] months, and said, 104This hath the Lord done unto me in the days when he looked upon me, to remove my reproach from among men.

[27] 105And106 in the sixth month Gabriel the angel was sent from God to Galilee107 to a [28] city called Nazareth, 108to a virgin given in marriage to a man named Joseph, of the [29] house of David; and the virgin’s name was Mary. 109And the angel entered unto her and said unto her, Peace be

---

90 This word is constantly recurring in the sense of fear.
92 Luke i. 15.
93 Everywhere, except in the introductory notes, the Arabic is the Spirit of Holiness, as in the Arabic versions.
94 Luke i. 16.
95 Luke i. 17.
96 See § 28, 17, note.
97 Luke i. 18.
100 Luke i. 21.
101 Luke i. 22.
102 Luke i. 23.
104 Luke i. 25.
106 The Vat. ms. has over this verse, The second section, from the Gospel of Luke, i.e., as divided in the Syriac and Arabic versions.
107 The Borgian ms. omits to Galilee.
108 Luke i. 27.
unto thee, thou who art filled with grace. Our Lord [30] is with thee, thou blessed amongst women. 

110 And she, when she beheld, was agitated [31] at his word, and pondered what this salutation could be. 111 And the angel said unto [32] her, Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with God. 

112 Thou shalt now conceive, [33] and bear a son, and call his name Jesus. 113 This shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High; and the Lord God will give him the throne of [34] David his father: and he shall rule over the house of Jacob for ever; 114 and to his [35] kingdom there shall be no end. 115 Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be to [36] me when no man hath known me? 116 The angel answered and said unto her, The [Arabic, p. 4] Holy Spirit will come, and the power of the Most High shall rest upon thee, and therefore shall be called the Son [37] of God. 117 And lo, Elizabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old [38] age; and this is the sixth month with her, her that is called barren. 118 For nothing is [39] difficult for God. 119 Mary said, Lo, I am the handmaid of the Lord; let it be unto me according unto thy word. And the angel departed from her. 

[40] 120 And then Mary arose in those days and went in haste into the hill country, to a [41] city of Judah; 121 and entered into the house of Zacharias, and asked for the health of [42] Elizabeth. 122 And when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in [43] her womb. 123 And Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit; and cried with a loud voice and said unto Mary, Blessed art thou amongst women, and blessed is the [44] fruit that is in thy womb. 124 Whence have I this privilege, that the mother of my [45] Lord should come unto me? 125 When the sound of thy salutation reached my ears, [46] with great joy rejoiced the babe in my womb. 126 And blessed is she who believed [47] that what was spoken to her from the Lord would be fulfilled. 127 And Mary said, 

My soul doth magnify the Lord, 

[48] 128 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour, 

[49] 129 Who hath looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden: 

---

110 Luke i. 29.  
112 Luke i. 31.  
113 Luke i. 32.  
114 Luke i. 33.  
115 Luke i. 34.  
116 Luke i. 35.  
117 Luke i. 36.  
118 Luke i. 37.  
120 Luke i. 39.  
121 Vat. ms., like that described by Gildemeister (see Introduction, 20) has into Galilee (cf. § 8, 10, note).  
122 Lit. the, a form due to Syriac influence (cf. § ii. 12, and passim).  
123 Luke i. 40.  
124 Luke i. 41.  
125 Luke i. 42.  
126 Luke i. 43.  
127 Luke i. 44.  
128 Luke i. 45.  
129 Luke i. 46.  
130 Luke i. 47.  
Lo, henceforth, all generations shall pronounce blessing on me. 

For he hath done great things for me, who is mighty, 

And holy is his name. 

And his mercy embraceth them who fear him, 

Throughout the ages and the times. 

He wrought the victory with his arm, 

And scattered them that prided themselves in their opinions. 

He overthrew them that acted haughtily from their thrones, 

And raised the lowly. 

He satisfied with good things the hungry, 

And left the rich without anything. 

He helped Israel his servant, 

And remembered his mercy 

(According as he spake with our fathers) 

Unto Abraham and unto his seed for ever. 

And Mary abode with Elizabeth about three months, and returned unto her house. 

And Elizabeth’s time of delivery was come; and she brought forth a son. 

And her neighbours and kinsfolk heard that God had multiplied his mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her. 

And when it was the eighth day, they came to circumcise the child, and called him Zacharias, calling him by the name of his father. 

And his mother answered and said unto them, Not so; but he shall be called John. 

And they made signs to his father, saying, How dost thou wish to name him? 

And he asked for a tablet, and wrote and said, His name is John. 

And every one wondered. 

And immediately his mouth was opened, and his tongue, and he spake

---

132 The Arabic word ordinarily means tribe or nation, but in this work it regularly represents the Syriac word used in the N.T. for generation. 

133 Luke i. 49. 

134 The Arabic would naturally be rendered, the blessing on me, That; but a number of passages in this work seem to justify the rendering given in the text (cf., e.g., § 46, 54, and especially § 15, 40). 

135 Luke i. 50. 


137 Luke i. 52. 

138 Luke i. 53. 

139 Luke i. 54. 

140 Luke i. 55. 

141 Luke i. 56. 

142 Luke i. 57. 

143 Luke i. 58. 

144 Luke i. 59. 

145 The text is indistinct in the Vat. MS. The reading seems to be conflate, the doublets being when it was, which is the reading of Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, and on. 

146 Luke i. 60. 

147 Luke i. 61. 


149 Luke i. 63. 

150 Luke i. 64.
and [66] praised God. And fear fell on all their neighbours: and this was spoken of in all [67] the mountains of Judah. And all who heard pondered in their hearts and said, What shall this child be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

[68] And Zacharias his father was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied and said,

[69] Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel,
Who hath cared for his people, and wrought for it salvation;
[70] And hath raised for us the horn of salvation
[Arabic, p. 6] In the house of David his servant
[71] (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets from eternity),
[72] That he might save us from our enemies,
And from the hand of all them that hate us.
[73] And he hath performed his mercy towards our fathers,
And remembered his holy covenants,
[74] And the oath which he sware unto Abraham our father,
[75] That he would give us deliverance from the hand of our enemies,
And without fear we shall serve before him
[76] All our days with equity and righteousness.
[77] And as for thee, O child, prophet of the Most High shalt thou be called.
Thou shalt go forth before the face of the Lord to prepare his way,
[78] To give the knowledge of salvation unto his people,
For the forgiveness of their sins,
[79] Through the mercy of the compassion of our God,
With which he careth for us, to appear from on high
[80] To give light to them that sit in darkness and under the shadow of death,
And to set straight our feet in the way of peace.

---

151 Luke i. 65.
152 Lit. described (cf. § ii. 46).
153 Luke i. 66.
155 Luke i. 68.
156 Luke i. 69.
157 Luke i. 70.
158 Luke i. 71.
159 Luke i. 72.
160 Luke i. 73.
161 Luke i. 74.
162 Or, should.
163 Luke i. 75.
164 Luke i. 76.
165 Luke i. 77.
166 Here and elsewhere the Arabic translator uses life and live and give life, as in Syriac, for salvation, etc.
167 Luke i. 78.
168 Borg. ms. has and for of.
169 The word used in the Peshitta means visit, either in the sense of caring for or in that of frequenting. See § 24, 29.
170 So Borg. ms. The Vat. ms. is very indistinct. Lagarde (see Introduction, 13, note), quoting Guidi, prints Whereby there visiteth us the manifestation from on high. The difference in Arabic is in a single stroke.
171 Luke i. 79.
[81] 172 And the child grew and became strong in the spirit, and abode in the desert until the time of his appearing unto the children of Israel.

Section II.

[1] [Arabic, p. 7] 173Now 174 the birth of Jesus the Messiah was on this wise: In the time when his mother was given in marriage to Joseph, before they came together, [2] she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. 175 And Joseph her husband was a just man and did not wish to expose her, and he purposed to put her away secretly. [3] 176 But when he thought of this, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, and said unto him, Joseph, son of David, fear not to take Mary thy wife, for that [4] which is begotten 177 in her is of the Holy Spirit. 178 She shall bear a son, and thou shalt [5] call his name Jesus, and he shall save [6] his people from their sins. 180 And all this was that the saying from the Lord by the prophet might be fulfilled:

[6] 181 Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, And they shall call his name Immanuel,

[7] which is, being interpreted, With us is our God. 182 And when Joseph arose from his [8] sleep, he did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took his wife; 182 and knew her not until she brought forth her firstborn son.

---

172 Luke i. 80.
173 Matt. i. 18.
174 This is preceded in Vat. ms. by the genealogy, Matt. i. 1–17 (see Introduction, 13), with the marginal note The Beginning of the Gospel of Matthew. (Lagarde, op. cit., 1886, p. 154.) The text presents nothing worthy of note in this place except that verse 16, construed on the same principle as the preceding verses, to which, except in the words printed in italics, it is strictly parallel in construction, reads thus: “Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, who of her begat Jesus, the Messiah” (cf. the remarkable reading of Sin. Syriac). As it stands, this is the only possible interpretation of the words, for who is masculine. But a mistake in the gender of a relative pronoun is very common in Arabic among illiterate people, while in Syriac there is, to begin with, no distinction. If then we correct the relative, who of her will become of whom (fem.), and begat will of course be construed as passive. We thus get the text followed in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, the ordinary reading of the Peshitta, of whom was born Jesus.
175 Matt. i. 19.
176 Matt. i. 20.
177 The Arabic might even more naturally be rendered born, thus giving us the reading that Isho’dad tells us was that of the Diatessaron (Harris, Fragments, p. 16 f.); but throughout the whole genealogy (see § 1, 81, note) this word has been used by the Vat. ms. in the sense of begat. Here the Borg. ms. has of her for in her; but Ibn-at-Tayyib in his Commentary discusses why Matthew wrote in and not of.
178 Matt. i. 21.
179 cf. § 1, 78.
180 Matt. i. 22.
181 Matt. i. 23.
182 Matt. i. 24.
183 Matt. i. 25a.
And in those days there went forth a decree from Augustus Caesar that all the people of his dominion should be enrolled. This first enrolment was while Quirinius was governor of Syria. And every man went to be enrolled in his city. And Joseph went up also from Nazareth, a city of Galilee, to Judæa, to the city of David (for he was of the house of David and of his tribe), with Mary his betrothed, she being with child, to be enrolled there. And while she was there the days for her being delivered were accomplished. And she brought forth her firstborn son; and she wrapped him in swaddling cloths and laid him in a manger, because there was no place for them where they were staying.

And there were in that region shepherds abiding, keeping their flock in the watch of the night. And behold, the angel of God came unto them, and the glory of the Lord shone upon them; and they were greatly terrified. And the angel said unto them, Be not terrified; for I bring you tidings of great joy which shall be to the whole world; there is born to you this day a Saviour, which is the Lord the Messiah, in the city of David. And this is a sign for you: ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling cloths and laid in a manger. And there appeared with the angels suddenly many heavenly forces praising God and saying,

Praise be to God in the highest,
And on the earth peace, and good hope to men.

And when the angels departed from them to heaven, the shepherds spake to one another and said, We will go to Bethlehem and see this word which hath been, as the Lord made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe laid in a manger. And when they saw, they reported the word which was spoken to them about the child. And all that heard wondered at the description which the shepherds described to

---

185 The Arabic expression is clearly meant to represent that used in the Peshitta.
186 Luke ii. 2.
187 This is the most natural meaning of the Arabic sentence; which, however, is simply a word-for-word reproduction.
188 Luke ii. 3.
189 Luke ii. 4.
190 Luke ii. 5.
192 Luke ii. 7.
196 Luke ii. 11.
199 The Arabic represents Syr. idiom.
201 Luke ii. 15.
202 Luke ii. 16.
204 Luke ii. 18.
205 cf. § 1, 66, note.
them. 206But Mary kept these 207 sayings [28] and discriminated 208 them in her heart. 209 And those shepherds returned, magnifying and praising God for all that they had seen and heard, according as it was described unto them.

[29] [Arabic, p. 9] 210And when eight days were fulfilled that the child should be circumcised, his name was called Jesus, being that by which he was called by the angel before his conception in the womb.

[30] 211And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were [31] completed, they took him up to Jerusalem to present him before the Lord 212 (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male opening the womb shall be called the [32] holy thing of the Lord), and to give a sacrificial victim as it is said in the law of [33] the Lord, A pair of doves or two young pigeons. 214 And there was in Jerusalem a man whose name was Simeon; and this man was upright and pious, and expecting [34] the consolation of Israel; and the Holy Spirit was upon him. 215 And it had been said unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death till he had seen with [35] his eyes the Messiah 216 of the Lord. 217 And this man came by the Spirit to the temple; and at the time when his parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might [36] present for him a sacrifice, as it is written in the law, 218 he bare him in his arms and praised God and said,

[37] 219 Now loosest thou the bonds of thy servant, O Lord, in peace, 220 According to thy saying;

[38] 221 For mine eye hath witnessed thy mercy,

[39] 222 Which thou hast made ready because of the whole world;

[40] 223 A light for the unveiling 224 of the nations,

And a glory to thy people Israel.

[41] 225 And Joseph and his mother were marvelling at the things which were being said [42] concerning him. 226 And Simeon blessed them and said to Mary his mother, Behold, he is set for

207 Borg. ms. inserts all above the line, after these. The meaning ought then to be, these things, namely, all the sayings.
208 The Arab. might mean set them apart; but the Syriac is against this.
211 Luke ii. 22.
212 Luke ii. 23.
216 Or, anointed.
217 Luke ii. 27.
218 Luke ii. 28.
219 Luke ii. 29.
220 For order cf. (in part) Sin. Syriac.
223 Luke ii. 32.
224 i.e., becoming manifest.
226 Luke ii. 34.
the overthrow and rising of many in Israel; and for a sign of contention; [43] 227and a spear 228 shall pierce 229 through thine own soul; that the thoughts of the [44] [Arabic, p. 10] hearts of many may be revealed. 230 And Anna the prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher, was also advanced in years (and she dwelt [45] with her husband seven years from her virginity, 231 and she remained a widow about eighty-four years); and she left not the temple, and served night and day with [46] fasting and prayer. 232 And she also rose in that hour and thanked the Lord, and she [47] spake of him with every one who was expecting the deliverance of Jerusalem. 233 And when they had accomplished everything according to what is in the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to Nazareth their city.

Section III.

[1, 2] 234 And after that, 235 the Magi came from the east to Jerusalem, 236 and said, Where is the King of the Jews which was born? We have seen his star in the east, and have [3] come to worship him. 237 And Herod the king heard, and he was troubled, and all [4] Jerusalem with him. 238 And he gathered all the chief priests and the scribes of the [5] people, and asked them in what place 239 the Messiah should be born. 240 They said, In Bethlehem of Judæa: thus it is written in the prophet,

[6] 241 Thou also, Bethlehem of Judah,
   Art not contemptible among the kings of Judah:
   From thee shall go forth a king,
   And he shall be a shepherd to my people Israel.

[7] 242 Then Herod called the Magi secretly, and inquired of them the time at which [8] the star appeared to them. 243 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said unto them, Go and search about the child diligently; and when ye have found him, come and [9] make known to me, that I also may

---

227 Luke ii. 35.
228 So also in Syriac versions and the quotation of Isho’dad from Ephraem (Harris, Fragments, p. 34), but not the Armenian version.
229 The Arabic sides with the Peshitta and Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, against the remarkable reading of Sin. supported by Isho’dad, as in last note (Syriac text), and the Armenian in Hill, p. 336. See now also The Guardian, Dec. 18, 1895.
230 Luke ii. 36.
234 Matt. ii. 1b.
235 On the substitution of this general phrase for Matt. ii. 1a, see the remarks of Harris in Fragments, etc., p. 37 ff.
236 Matt. ii. 2.
237 Matt. ii. 3.
238 Matt. ii. 4.
239 This periphrasis for where is very characteristic of this work.
240 Matt. ii. 5.
241 Matt. ii. 6.
242 Matt. ii. 7.
243 Matt. ii. 8.
go and worship him. 244 And they, when they [Arabic, p. 11] heard the king, departed; and lo, the star which they had seen in the east went before them, until it came and stood above the place where the child [10, 11] was. 245 And when they beheld the star, they rejoiced with very great joy. 246 And they entered the house and beheld the child with Mary his mother, and fell down worshipping him, and opened their saddle-bags and offered to him offerings, gold and [12] myrrh and frankincense. 247 And they saw in a dream248 that they should not return to Herod, and they travelled by another way in going to their country.

[13] 249 And when they had departed, the angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph, and said unto him, Rise, take the child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I speak to thee; for Herod is determined to seek the child [14] to slay him. 250 And Joseph arose and took the child and his mother in the night, and [15] fled into Egypt, 251 and remained in it until the time of the death of Herod: that that might be fulfilled which was said by the Lord in the prophet, which said, From [16] Egypt did I call my son. 252 And Herod then, when he saw that he was mocked of the Magi, was very angry, and sent and killed all the male children which were in Bethlehem and all its borders, from two years old and under, according to the time [17] which he had inquired from the Magi. 253 Then was fulfilled the saying in Jeremiah the prophet, which said,

[18] 254 A voice was heard in Ramah, Weeping and much lamentation; Rachel weeping255 for her children, And not willing to be consoled for their loss.

[19] 256 But when Herod the king died, the angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to [20] Joseph in Egypt, 257 and said unto him, Rise and take the child and his mother, and [Arabic, p. 12] go into the land of Israel; for they have died who sought the child’s life. 258 And Joseph rose and took the child and his mother, and came to the land [22] of Israel. 259 But when he heard that Archelaus had become king over Judæa instead of Herod his father, he feared to go thither; and he saw in a dream that he should [23] go into the land of Galilee, 260 and that he should abide in a city called Nazareth: that the saying in the prophet might be fulfilled, that he should be called a Nazarene.

---

244 Matt. ii. 9.
245 Matt. ii. 10.
246 Matt. ii. 11.
247 Matt. ii. 12.
248 So in later Arabic and some Arabic versions. According to classical usage the word means sleep.
249 Matt. ii. 13.
251 Matt. ii. 15.
252 Matt. ii. 16.
253 Matt. ii. 17.
254 Matt. ii. 18.
255 Or, is weeping, and so in next line is not willing.
256 Matt. ii. 19.
257 Matt. ii. 20.
258 Matt. ii. 21.
259 Matt. ii. 22.
260 Matt. ii. 23.
And the child grew, and became strong in spirit, becoming filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him. [26] And his kinsfolk used to go every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the passover. [26] And when he was twelve years old, they went up according to their custom, [27] to the feast. And when the days were accomplished, they returned; and the child [28] Jesus remained in Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew not: [26] and they supposed that he was with the children of their company. And when they had gone one day’s journey, they sought him beside their people and those who knew them, [29] and they found him not; [26] so they returned to Jerusalem and sought him again. [30] And after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, [31] hearing them and asking them questions; [26] and all who heard him wondered at [32] his wisdom and his words. [27] And when they saw him they wondered, and his mother said unto him, My son, why hast thou dealt with us thus? behold, I and thy father [33] have been seeking for thee with much anxiety. [27] And he said unto them, Why were ye seeking me? know ye not that I must be in the house of my Father? [27] And they [35] understood not the word which he spake unto them. [27] And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was obedient to them: and his mother used to keep all these sayings in her heart. [36] And Jesus grew in his stature and wisdom, and in grace with God and men. [37] And in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, when Pontius Pilate was governor in Judæa, and one of the four rulers, Herod, in Galilee; and Philip his brother, one of the four rulers, in Ituræa and in the district of Trachonitis; and [38] Lysanias, one of the four rulers, in Abilene; [27] in the chief-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the command of God went forth to John the son of Zacharias in the [39] desert. [27] And he came into all the region which is about Jordan, proclaiming the baptism of repentance unto the forgiveness of sins. [28] And he was preaching

262 Luke ii. 41.
263 A general word (cf. Syr. versions).
264 Luke ii. 42.
265 Luke ii. 43.
266 Luke ii. 44.
267 Luke ii. 45.
268 Luke ii. 46.
269 Luke ii. 47.
271 Luke ii. 49.
272 Or, knew.
273 Luke ii. 50.
274 Luke ii. 51.
275 Luke ii. 52.
277 Luke iii. 2.
278 There is a very rare use of this Arabic word in the Hebrew sense of saying.
279 Luke iii. 3.
280 So Vat. ms. The Borg. ms. has with.
281 Matt. iii. 1b.
in the wilderness of Judæa, and saying, 282Repent ye; the kingdom of heaven is come near. 283This is he that was spoken of in Isaiah the prophet,  

The voice which crieth in the desert,  
[43] 284Prepare ye the way of the Lord,  
And make straight in the plain, paths for our God.  
[44] 285All the valleys shall become filled,  
And all the mountains and hills shall become low;  
And the rough shall become plain, And the difficult place, easy;  
[45] 286And all flesh shall see the salvation 287of God.  

[46] 288This man came to bear witness, that he might bear witness to the light, that [47] every man might believe through his mediation. 289He was not the light, but that he [48] might bear witness to the light, 290which was the light of truth, that giveth light to [49] every man coming into the world. 291He was in the world, and the world was made [50] by him, and the world knew [51] him not. 292He came unto his own, and his own received him not. 293And those who received him, to them gave he the power 294that they might [52] be sons of God,—those which believe in his name: 295which were born, not of blood. [53] nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of a man, but of God. 296And the Word became flesh, and took up his abode among us; and we saw his glory as the glory [54] of the only Son from the Father, which is full of grace and equity. 297 298John bare witness [Arabic, p. 14] of him, and cried, and said, This is he that I said cometh after me and [55] was before me, because he was before me. 299 300And of his fullness received [56] we all grace for grace. 301For the law was given through the mediation of Moses, but truth and grace were 302through Jesus Christ.

---

282 Matt. iii. 2.  
283 Matt. iii. 3a.  
284 Luke iii. 4b.  
285 Luke iii. 5.  
287 See note on § 1, 78.  
288 John i. 7.  
289 John i. 8.  
290 John i. 9.  
291 John i. 10.  
292 John i. 11.  
293 John i. 12.  
294 Or, authority.  
295 John i. 13.  
296 John i. 14.  
297 In Syr. this word also means truth.  
298 John i. 15.  
299 Or, earlier than I.  
300 John i. 16.  
301 John i. 17.  
302 i.e., came to be.
Section IV.

[1] 303 No man hath seen God at any time; the only Son, God, 304 which is in the bosom of his Father, he hath told of him.

[2] 305 And this is the witness of John when the Jews sent to him from Jerusalem priests [3] and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? 306 And he acknowledged, and denied not; [4] and he confessed that he was not the Messiah. 307 And they asked him again, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he said, I am not he. Art thou a prophet? He [5] said, No. 308 They said unto him, Then who art thou? that we may answer them that [6] sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? 309 And he said, I am the voice that crieth in [7] the desert, Repair ye the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet. 310 And they [8] that were sent were from the Pharisees. 312 And they asked him and said unto him, Why baptizest thou now, when thou art not the Messiah, nor Elijah, nor a prophet? [9] 313 John answered and said unto them, I baptize with water: among you is standing [10] one whom ye know not: 315 this is he who I said cometh after me and was before [11] me, the latches of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose. 316 And that was in Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

[12] 317 Now John’s raiment was camel’s hair, and he was girded with skins, and his food [13] [Arabic, p. 15] was of locusts and honey of the wilderness. 318 Then went out unto him the people of Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region which is about the Jordan; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. 321 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to be baptized, he said unto them, Ye children of vipers, who hath led you to flee from the wrath to come? [16, 17] 324 Do now the fruits which are worthy of repentance; and think and say not within yourselves, We have a father, even Abraham; for I say unto you,

---

303 John i. 18.
304 cf. Peshitta, etc. (not Cur.); cf. also Gildemeister, op. cit., p. 29, on Luke ix. 20.
305 John i. 19.
306 John i. 20.
307 John i. 21.
308 John i. 22.
309 John i. 23.
310 John i. 24.
311 Lit. from the side of.
312 John i. 25.
313 John i. 26.
314 Or, in.
315 John i. 27.
316 John i. 28.
317 Matt. iii. 4.
318 On the original Diatessaron reading, honey and milk of the mountains, or, milk and honey of the mountains, which latter Ibn-at-Tayyib cites in his Commentary (folio 44b, 45a) as a reading, but without any allusion to the Diatessaron, see, e.g., now Harris, Fragments of the Com. of Ephr. Syr. upon the Diat. (London, 1895), p. 17 f.
319 Matt. iii. 5.
320 Matt. iii. 6.
321 Matt. iii. 7.
322 The translator uses invariably an Arabic word (name of a sect) meaning Separatists.
323 Lit. Zindiks, a name given to Persian dualists and others.
324 Matt. iii. 8.
325 Matt. iii. 9.
that God is able to [18] raise up of these stones children unto Abraham. 326 Behold, the axe hath been laid at the roots of the trees, and so every tree that beareth not good fruit shall be taken and [19] cast into the fire. 327 And the multitudes were asking him and saying, What shall we do? [20] 328 He answered and said unto them, He that hath two tunics shall give to him that [21] hath not; and he that hath food shall do likewise. 331 And the publicans also came [22] to be baptized, and they said unto him, Teacher, what shall we do? 332 He said unto [23] them, Seek not more than what ye are commanded to seek. 333 And the servants of the guard asked him and said, And we also, what shall we do? He said unto them, Do not violence to any man, nor wrong him; and let your allowances satisfy you.

[24] 335 And when the people were conjecturing about John, and all of them thinking [25] in their hearts whether he was haply the Messiah, 337 John answered and said unto them, I baptize you with water; there cometh one after me who is stronger than I, the latches of whose shoes I am not worthy to loosen; he will baptize you with the [26] Holy Spirit and fire: 338 who taketh the fan in his hand to cleanse his threshing-floors, [Arabic, p. 16] and the wheat he gathereth into his garner, while the straw he shall burn in fire which can not be put out.

[27] 340 And other things he taught and preached among the people.

[28] 341 Then came Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be baptized of him. [29] 342 And Jesus was about thirty years old, and it was supposed that he was the son of [30] Joseph. 343 344 And John saw Jesus coming unto him, and said, This is the Lamb of [31] God, that taketh on itself the burden of the sins of the world! 345 This is he concerning whom I said, There cometh after me a
man who was before me, because he was [32] before me.\(^\text{346}\) 347\ And I knew him not; but that he should be made manifest to Israel, [33] for this cause came I to baptize with water. 348And John was hindering him and [34] saying, I have need of being baptized by thee, and comest thou to me? 349\ Jesus answered him and said, Suffer this now: thus it is our duty to fulfill all righteousness. [35] Then he suffered him. 350\ And when all the people were baptized, Jesus also [36] was baptized. 351\ And immediately he went up out of the water, and heaven opened [37] [Arabic, p. 17] to him,\(^\text{352}\) and the Holy Spirit descended upon him in the similitude of the [38] body of a dove;\(^\text{353}\) and lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved [39] Son, in whom I am well pleased. 355\ And John bare witness and said, I beheld the [40] Spirit descend from heaven like a dove; and it abode upon him. 356\ But I knew him not; but he that sent me to baptize with water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt behold the Spirit descending and lighting upon him, the same is he that [41] baptizeth with the Holy Spirit. 357\ And I have seen and borne witness that this is the Son of God.

[42, 43] \(^\text{358}\)\ And Jesus returned from the Jordan, filled with the Holy Spirit. 359\ And immediately the Spirit took him out into the wilderness, to be tried of the devil;\(^\text{360}\) 361\ and he [44] was with the beasts. 362\ And he fasted forty days and forty nights. 363\ And he ate nothing [45] in those days, and at the end of them he hungered. 364\ And the tempter came and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, speak, and these stones shall become [46] bread. 365\ He answered and said, It is written, Not by bread alone shall man live, but [47] by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. 367\ Then the devil\(^\text{367}\) brought [48] him to the holy city, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written,

He shall give his angels charge concerning thee:
And they shall take thee on their arms,

\(^{346}\) cf. § 3, 54, note.

\(^{347}\) John i. 31.

\(^{348}\) Matt. iii. 14.

\(^{349}\) Matt. iii. 15.

\(^{350}\) Luke iii. 21b.

\(^{351}\) Matt. iii. 16b.

\(^{352}\) For the statement of Isho’dad (see above, Introduction, 10), “And straightway, as the Diatessaron testifieth, light shone forth,” etc., see Harris, *Fragments*, etc., p. 43 f.

\(^{353}\) Luke iii. 22a.

\(^{354}\) John i. 32.

\(^{355}\) John i. 33.

\(^{356}\) John i. 34.

\(^{357}\) Luke iv. 1a.

\(^{358}\) Mark i. 12.

\(^{359}\) Lit. *calumniator*.

\(^{360}\) Mark i. 13b.

\(^{361}\) Matt. iv. 2a.

\(^{362}\) Luke iv. 2b.

\(^{363}\) Matt. iv. 2b, 3.

\(^{364}\) Matt. iv. 4.

\(^{365}\) Matt. iv. 5.

\(^{366}\) Lit. *calumniator*.

\(^{367}\) Matt. iv. 6.
So that thy foot shall not stumble against a stone.

[49] 369 Jesus said unto him, And370 it is written also, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy [50] God. 371 And the devil372 took him up to a high mountain, and shewed him all the kingdoms [51] [Arabic, p. 18] of the earth, and their glory, in the least time; 373 and the devil374 said unto him, To thee will I give all this dominion, and its glory, which is delivered to [52] me that I may give it to whomsoever I will. 375 If then thou wilt worship before me, all of it shall be thine.

Section V.

[1] 376 Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou [2] shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone shalt thou serve. 377 And when the [3] devil378 had completed all his temptations, he departed from him for a season. 379 And behold, the angels drew near and ministered unto him.

[4, 5] 380 And next day John was standing, and two of his disciples; 381 and he saw Jesus as [6] he was walking, and said, Behold, the Lamb of God! 382 And his two disciples heard [7] him saying this, 383 and they followed Jesus. 384 And Jesus turned and saw them coming after him, and said unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Our master, [8] where art thou staying? 385 And he said unto them, Come and see. And they came and saw his place, and abode with him that day: and it was about the tenth hour. 386 One of the two which heard from 387 John, and followed Jesus, was Andrew the [10] brother of Simon. 388 And he saw first Simon his brother, and said unto him, We have [11] found the Messiah. 389 And he brought him unto Jesus. And Jesus looked upon him and said, Thou art Simon, son of Jonah: thou shalt be called Cephas.390

369 Matt. iv. 7.
370 Borg. ms. omits and.
371 Luke iv. 5.
372 Lit. backbiter, a different word from that used above in § 4, 43, 47.
374 Lit. backbiter, a different word from that used above in § 4, 43, 47.
376 Matt. iv. 10.
378 Lit. backbiter, a different word from that used above in § 4, 43, 47.
379 Matt. iv. 11b.
380 John i. 35.
381 John i. 36.
382 John i. 37.
383 Or, speaking.
384 John i. 38.
385 John i. 39.
386 John i. 40.
387 cf. Peshitta.
388 John i. 41a.
389 John i. 42a.
390 The Arabic word used throughout this work means Stones.
[12] And on the next day Jesus desired to go forth to Galilee, and he found Philip,[13] [Arabic, p. 19] and said unto him, Follow me. 392 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, of the city[14] of Andrew and Simon. 393 And Philip found Nathanael, and said unto him, He of whom Moses did write in the law and in the prophets, we have found that [15] he is Jesus the son of Joseph of Nazareth. 394 Nathanael said unto him, Is it possible that there can be any good thing from Nazareth? Philip said unto him, Come and [16] see. 395 And Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and said of him, This is indeed a[16] son of Israel in whom is no guile. 397 And Nathanael said unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus said unto him, Before Philip called thee, while thou wast under the [18] fig tree, I saw thee. 398 Nathanael answered and said unto him, My Master, thou art [19] the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. 399 Jesus said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, hast thou believed? thou shalt see what is [20] greater than this. 400 And he said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see the heavens opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

[21] And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit to Galilee.

[22] And on the third day there was a feast in Cana,[23] a[24] city of Galilee; and the [23] mother of Jesus was there: 402 and Jesus also and his disciples were invited to the [24] feast. 403 And they lacked wine: and his mother said unto Jesus, They have no wine. 404 And Jesus said unto her, What have I to do with thee, woman? hath not mine [26] hour come? 406 And his mother said unto the servants, What he saith unto you, do. 407 And there were there six vessels of stone, placed for the Jews’ purification, such as [28] [Arabic, p. 20] would contain two or three jars. 411 And Jesus said unto them, Fill the vessels [29] with water. And they filled them to the top. 412 He said unto them, Draw [30] out now, and present to the ruler of the feast. And they did so. 413 And when the ruler of the company tasted that water which had become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants knew, because they filled up the water), the ruler of the company called [31] the

409 John ii. 5.
410 John ii. 6.
411 John ii. 7.
412 John ii. 8.
413 John ii. 9.
bridegroom, and said unto him, Every man presenteth first the good wine, and on intoxication he bringeth what is poor; but thou hast kept the good wine until now. 415 And this is the first sign which Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him. 417 And his fame spread in all the country which was around them. 418 And he taught in their synagogues, and was glorified by every man. 420 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and entered, according to his custom, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read. 421 And he was given the book of Isaiah the prophet. And Jesus opened the book and found the place where it was written,

[37] 422 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,
And for this anointed he me, to preach good tidings to the poor;
And he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted,
And to proclaim forgiveness to the evil-doers, and sight to the blind,
And to bring the broken into forgiveness,

[38] 423 And to proclaim an acceptable year of the Lord.

[39] 424 And he rolled up the book and gave it to the servant, and went and sat down: 425 And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled which ye have heard with your ears. 428 And they all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which were proceeding from his mouth.

[42] [Arabic, p. 21] 429 And from that time began Jesus to proclaim the gospel of the kingdom of God, and to say, Repent ye, and believe in the gospel. 430 The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of heaven hath come near.

[44] 431 And while he was walking on the shore of the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who was called Cephas, and Andrew his brother, casting their nets into the sea; for they were fishers. 432 And Jesus said unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. 433 And

---

414 John ii. 10.
415 John ii. 11.
416 Perhaps a comma should be inserted after sign.
418 Luke iv. 15.
419 If the text does not contain a misprint the word for by is wanting in both MSS. It should doubtless be restored as in § 7, 3.
420 Luke iv. 16.
423 Evil-doers could easily be an Arabic copyist’s corruption of captives; but the word used here for forgiveness could hardly spring from an Arabic release (in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, where the thing seems to have happened, a different word is used). In Syriac, however, they are the same; while the first pair contain the same consonants.
424 See preceding note.
429 Matt. iv. 17a.
430 Mark i. 15.
431 Matt. iv. 18.
432 Matt. iv. 19.
433 Matt. iv. 20.
they immediately left their nets there and followed [47] him. 434 And when he went on from thence, he saw other two brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending [48] their nets; and Jesus called them. 435 And they immediately forsook the ship and their father Zebedee, and followed him.

[49] 436 And when the multitude gathered unto him to hear the word of God, while he [50] was standing on the shore of the sea of Gennesaret, 437 he saw two boats standing beside the sea, while 438 the twofishers which were gone out of them were washing their [51] nets. 439 And one of them belonged to Simon Cephas. And Jesus went up and sat down in it, and commanded that they should move away a little from the land into [52] the water. And he sat down and taught the multitudes from the boat. 440 And when he had left off his speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and cast your [53] net for a draught. 441 And Simon answered and said unto him, My Master, we toiled [54] all night and caught nothing; now 442 at thy word I will cast the net. 443 And when they did this, there were enclosed 444 a great many fishes; and their net was on the [55] point of breaking. 445 And they beckoned to their comrades that were in the other boat, to come and help them. And when they came, they filled both boats, so that they were on the point of sinking.

Section VI.

[1] [Arabic, p. 22] 446 But when Simon Cephas saw this he fell before the feet of Jesus, and said unto him, My Lord, I beseech of thee to depart from me, for I am [2] a sinful man. 447 And amazement took possession of him, and of all who were with him, [3] because of the draught of the fishes which they had taken. 448 And thus also were James and John the sons of Zebedee overtaken, 449 who were Simon’s partners. And Jesus said [4] unto Simon, Fear not; henceforth thou shalt be a fisher of men unto life. 450 And they brought the boats to the land; and they left everything, and followed him.

434 Matt. iv. 21.
435 Matt. iv. 22.
438 Or, but.
440 Luke v. 5.
442 Borg. ms. has but. The Arabic expressions are very similar.
444 Borg. ms. has he did this, he enclosed, on which see § 38, 43, note (end). Either reading could spring from the other, within the Arabic.
446 Luke v. 9.
448 Luke v. 11.
449 The verb may be active as well as passive, but does not agree in gender with amazement. Mistakes in gender are, however, very common transcriptional errors.
[5] 451 And after that came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judæa; and he went [6] about there with them, and baptized. 452 And John also was baptizing in Ænon, which is beside Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. [7, 8] 453 And John was not yet come into prison. 454 And there was an inquiry between [9] one of John’s disciples and one of the Jews about purifying. 455 And they 456 came unto John, and said unto him, Our master, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom [10] thou hast borne witness, behold, he also baptizeth, and many come to him. 457 John answered and said unto them, 458 A man can receive nothing of himself, except it be [11] given him 459 from heaven. 460 Ye are they that bear witness unto me that I said, I am [12] not the Messiah, but I am one sent 461 because and I am one sent 461 before him. 462 And he that hath a bride is a bridegroom: and the friend of the bridegroom is he that standeth and listeneth to him, and rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom’s voice. Lo now, 463 behold, [13, 14] 464 [Arabic, p. 23] my joy becometh complete. 465 And he must increase and I decrease. 466 For he that is come from above is higher than everything; and he that is of the earth, of the earth he is, and of the earth he speaketh; and he that came down from heaven is [15] higher than all. 468 And he beareth witness of what he hath seen and heard: and no man [16] receiveth his witness. 469 And he that hath received his witness hath asserted 470 that he is [17] truly God. 471 472 And he whom God hath sent speaketh the words 473 of God: God gave [18] not the Spirit by measure. 474 The Father loveth the Son, and hath put everything in [19] his hands. 475 Whosoever believeth in the Son hath eternal 476 life; but whosoever obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God cometh 477 upon him.

451 John iii. 22.
452 John iii. 23.
453 John iii. 24.
454 John iii. 25.
455 John iii. 26.
456 Dual.
457 John iii. 27.
458 Plural. In the Peshitta it is two individuals in verse 25. In Sin. the first is an individual and the second is ambiguous. In Cur. both are plural.
459 Or, he be given it.
460 John iii. 28.
461 The ordinary word for apostle.
462 John iii. 29.
463 See § 9, 21, note.
464 So Ciasca’s printed text. The Vat. ms., however, probably represents a past tense.
465 John iii. 30.
466 John iii. 31.
467 cf. Peshitta.
468 John iii. 32.
469 John iii. 33.
470 cf. consonants of Syriac text.
471 Borg. ms., that God is truly, or, assuming a very common grammatical inaccuracy, that God is true or truth, the reading in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary.
472 John iii. 34.
473 Lit. saying.
474 John iii. 35.
475 John iii. 36.
476 Lit. the life of eternity; here and everywhere except § 21, 40.
477 i.e., alighteth-and-stayeth.
And Jesus learned that the Pharisees had heard that he had received many disciples, [21] and that he was baptizing more than John (not that Jesus was himself baptizing, [22] but his disciples); 481 and so he left Judæa.

And Herod the governor, because he used to be rebuked by John because of Herodias the wife of Philip his brother, and for all the sins which he was committing, [24] added to all that also this, 483 that he shut up John in prison. 484 And when Jesus heard that John was delivered up, he went away to Galilee. 485 And he entered again into Cana, where he had made the water wine. And there [27] was at Capernaum a king’s servant, whose son was sick. 486 And this man heard that Jesus was come from Judæa to Galilee; and he went to him, and besought of him that he would come down and heal his son; for he had come near unto death. [28, 29] 487 Jesus said unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye do not believe. 488 The [Arabic, p. 24] king’s servant said unto him, My Lord, come down, that the child die not. [30] 490 Jesus said unto him, Go; for thy son is alive. And that man believed the word which Jesus spake, and went. 491 And when he went down, his servants met him [32] and told him, and 492 said unto him, Thy son is alive. 493 And he asked them at what time he recovered. They said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left [33] him. 494 And his father knew that that was at that hour in which Jesus said unto him, [34] Thy son is alive. 495 And he believed, he and the whole people of his house. And this [35] is the second sign 496 which Jesus did when he returned from Judæa to Galilee. 497 And he was preaching in the synagogues of Galilee.

And he left Nazareth, and came and dwelt in Capernaum by the sea shore, in the [37] borders of Zebulun and Naphtali: 499 that it might be fulfilled which was said in Isaiah the prophet, who said,

The land of Zebulun, the land of Naphtali,
The way of the sea, the passage of the Jordan,
Galilee of the nations:

[38] 500

478 John iv. 1.
479 Or, knew.
480 John iv. 2.
481 John iv. 3a.
482 Luke iii. 19.
484 Matt. iv. 12.
485 John iv. 46.
486 John iv. 47.
487 John iv. 48.
488 Or, will.
489 John iv. 49.
490 John iv. 50.
491 John iv. 51.
492 Or, good news, and.
493 John iv. 52.
494 John iv. 53.
495 John iv. 54.
496 See § 5, 32, note.
497 Luke iv. 44.
500 Matt. iv. 15.
[39] 501 The people sitting in darkness
Saw a great light,
And those sitting in the region and in the shadow of death,
There appeared to them a light.

[40] 502 And he taught them on the sabbaths. 503 And they wondered because of his doctrine: 504 [41] for his word was as if it were authoritative. 505 And there was in the synagogue [42] a man with
an unclean devil, and he cried out with a loud voice, and said, 506 Let me alone; what have I to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come for our [43] destruction? I know thee who thou art, thou Holy One of God. 507 And Jesus rebuked him, and said, Stop up thy mouth, and come out of him. And the demon threw him [44] in the midst and came out of him, having done him no harm. 508 And great amazement [Arabic, p. 25] took hold upon every man. And they talked one with another, and said, What is this word that orders the unclean spirits with power and [45] authority, and they come out? 509 And the news of him spread abroad in all the region which was
around them.

[46] 510 And when Jesus went out of the synagogue, 511 he saw a man sitting among the publicans, 512
named Matthew: and he said unto him, Come after me. And he rose, and followed him.

[47, 48] 513 And Jesus came to the house of Simon and Andrew with James and John. 514 And Simon’s wife’s mother was oppressed with a great fever, and they besought him for [49] her. 515 And he stood over her and rebuked her fever, and it left her, and immediately [50] she rose and ministered to them. 516 And at even they brought to him many that had [51] demons: and he cast out their devils with the 517 word. 518 And all that had sick, their diseases being divers and malignant, brought them unto him. And he laid his hand [52] on them one by one 519 and healed them: 520 that that might be fulfilled which was said [53] in the prophet Isaiah, who said, He taketh our pains and beareth our diseases. 521 And [54] all the city was gathered together unto the door of Jesus. 522 And he cast out devils also from many, as they were crying out and saying, Thou art the Messiah, the Son of

501 Matt. iv. 16.
503 Luke iv. 32.
504 Perhaps we might here render learning; but see § 28, 17, note.
506 Luke iv. 34.
507 Luke iv. 35.
508 Luke iv. 36.
511 Matt. ix. 9b.
512 So in the Arabic. It is, however, simply a misinterpretation of the expression in the Syriac versions for at the place of
toll (cf. Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary).
513 Mark i. 29b.
514 Luke iv. 38c.
516 Matt. viii. 16a.
517 cf. § 1, 40, note 2.
519 Or, each.
520 Matt. viii. 17.
521 Mark i. 33.
God; and he rebuked them. And he suffered not the demons to speak, because they knew him that he was the Lord the Messiah.

Section VII.

[1] [Arabic, p. 26] 523 And in the morning of that day he went out very early, and went to a [2] desert place, and was there praying. 524 And Simon and those that were with [3] him sought him. 525 And when they found him, they said unto him, All the people seek for [4] thee. 526 He said unto them, Let us go into the adjacent villages and towns, that I may [5] preach there also; for to this end did I come. 527 And the multitudes were seeking him, and came till they reached him; and they took hold of him, that he should not [6] go away from them. 528 But Jesus said unto them, I must preach of the kingdom of [7] God in other cities also: for because of this gospel was I sent. 529 And Jesus was going about all the cities and the villages, and teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all the diseases and all the sicknesses, [8] 530 and casting out the devils. 531 And his fame became known [532] that [533] he was teaching in [9] every place and being glorified by every man. 534 And when he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphæus sitting among the tax-gatherers; 535 and he said unto him, Follow [10] me: and he rose and followed him. 536 And the news of him was heard of in all the land of Syria: and they brought unto him all those whom grievous ills had befallen through divers diseases, and those that were enduring torment, and those that were possessed, and lunatics, 537 and paralytics; and he healed them.

[11, 12] 538 And after some days Jesus entered into Capernaum again. 539 And when they heard that he was in the house, 540 many gathered, so that it could not hold them, even about [13] [Arabic, p. 27] the door; and he made known to them the word of God. 541 And there were there some of the Pharisees and the teachers of the law, sitting, come from all the villages of Galilee, and Judæa, and Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was [14] present to heal them. 542 And some men brought a
bed with a man on it who was paralytic. [15] And they sought to bring him in and lay him before him. 543 And when they found no way to bring him in because of the multitude of people, they went up to the roof, and let him down with his bed from the roofing, 544 into the midst before Jesus. [16] 545 And when Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the paralytic, My son, thy sins are forgiven [17] thee. 546 And the scribes and Pharisees began to think within their hearts, Why doth this man blaspheme? 547 Who is it that is able to forgive sins, but God alone? [18] 548 And Jesus knew by the spirit that they were thinking this within themselves, and he [19] said unto them, Why do ye think this within your heart? 549 Which is better, 550 that it should be said to the paralytic, Thy sins are forgiven thee, or that it should be said [20] to him, Arise, and take thy bed, and walk? 551 That ye may know that the Son of man [21] is empowered on earth to forgive sins (and he said to the paralytic), 552 I say unto thee, [22] Arise, take thy bed, and go to thine house. 553 And he rose forthwith, and took his bed, and went out in the presence of all. 554 And he went to his house praising God. [23] 555 And when those multitudes saw, they feared; 556 and amazement took possession of [24] them, 557 and they praised God, who had given such power to men. 558 And they said, We have seen marvellous things to-day, 559 of which we have never before seen the like.

[25] [Arabic, p. 28] 560 And after that, Jesus went out, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting [26] among the publicans; 561 and he said unto him, Follow me. 562 And he left [27] everything, and rose, and followed him. 563 And Levi made him a great feast in his house. And there was a great multitude of the publicans and others sitting with him. [28] 564 And the scribes and Pharisees murmured, and said unto his disciples, Why do ye eat [29] and drink with the publicans and sinners? 565 Jesus answered and said unto them, The physician seeketh not those who are well, but those that are afflicted with grievous [30, 31] sickness. 566 567 I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners, to repentance. 568 And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast always, and pray, and

544 This word may be either a singular or a plural.
547 This word ordinarily means to forge lies against; but our translator uses it regularly as here.
548 Mark ii. 8.
549 Mark ii. 9.
550 Peshitta has easier.
551 Mark ii. 10.
552 Mark ii. 11.
553 Mark ii. 12a.
555 Matt. ix. 8a.
557 Matt. ix. 8b.
558 Luke v. 26c.
559 Mark ii. 12c.
560 Luke v. 27.
561 See above, note to § 6, 46.
566 A Syriacism.
567 Luke v. 32.
the [32] Pharisees also, but thy disciples eat and drink? 569 He said unto them, Ye cannot make [33] the sons of the marriage feast570 fast, while the bridegroom is with them. 571 Days will come, when the bridegroom is taken away from them; then will they fast in those [34] days. 572 And he spake unto them a parable: 573 No man inserteth a new patch and seweth it in a worn garment, lest the newness of the new take from the worn, and [35] there occur a great rent. 574 And no man putteth fresh wine into old skins, lest the wine burst the skins, and the skins be destroyed, and the wine spilled; but they put [36] the fresh wine in the new skins, and both are preserved. 575 And no man drinketh old wine and straightway desireth fresh; for he saith, The old is better.

[37] 576 And while Jesus was walking on the sabbath day among the sown fields, his disciples [Arabic, p. 29] hungered. And they were rubbing the ears with their hands, and [38] eating. 577 But some of the Pharisees, when they saw them, 578 said unto him, See, [39] why579 do thy disciples on the sabbath day that which is not lawful? 580 But Jesus said unto them, Have ye not read in olden time what David did, when he had need and [40] hungered, he and those that were with him? 581 how he entered the house of God, when Abiathar was high priest, and ate the bread of the table of the Lord, which it was not lawful that any should eat, save the priests, and gave to them that were with him also? [41] 582 And he said unto them, The sabbath was created because of man, and man was not [42] created because of the sabbath. 583 Or have ye not read in the law, that the priests in [43] the temple profane the sabbath, and yet they are blameless? 584 I say unto you now, [44] that here is what585 is greater than the temple. 586 If ye had known this;587 I love mercy, [45] not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned588 those on whom is no blame. 589 The [46] Lord of the sabbath is the Son of man. 590 And his relatives heard, and went out to take him, and said, He hath gone out of his mind.

569 Luke v. 34.
570 The Arabic word, which occurs here in many of the Arabic versions, could also be read bridegroom. The Syriac word for marriage chamber is also used in the sense of marriage feast.
571 Luke v. 35.
573 Mark ii. 21.
574 Mark ii. 22.
576 Matt. xii. 1.
577 Matt. xii. 2a.
578 Mark ii. 24.
579 Syr. In Arab. it means what?
580 Mark ii. 25.
581 Mark ii. 26.
582 Mark ii. 27.
583 Matt. xii. 5.
584 Matt. xii. 6.
585 This may be simply a misinterpretation of the ordinary Syriac reading, which in all probability agrees with the masculine reading found in the Text. Rec. of the Greek.
586 Matt. xii. 7.
587 Is it possible that the Arabic word after known is not meant simply to introduce the quotation, but is to be taken in the adverbial sense, how representing the Syriac what that is?
588 See § 10, 13, note.
589 Matt. xii. 8.
590 Mark iii. 21.
[47] And on the next sabbath day he entered into the synagogue and was teaching. [48] And there was there a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and the Pharisees were watching him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day, [49] that they might find the means of accusing him. [50] But he knew their thoughts, and said unto the man whose hand was withered, Rise and come near into the midst of the synagogue. [51] And when he came and stood, Jesus said unto them, I ask you, which is lawful to be done on the sabbath day, good or evil? shall lives be saved or destroyed? [52] But they were silent. [53] Regarding them with anger, being grieved because of the hardness of their hearts. And he said unto the man, Stretch out thy hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand became straight. [54] Then he said unto them, What man of you shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a well on the sabbath day, will not take it and lift it out? [55] And how much is man better than a sheep! Wherefore it is lawful on the sabbath to do good.

Section VIII.

[1] And the Pharisees went out, and consulted together concerning him, that they might destroy him. [2] And Jesus perceived, and removed thence: and great multitudes followed him; and he healed all of them: [3] and he forbade them that they should not make him known: [4] that the saying in Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which said, [5] Behold, my servant with whom I am pleased; My beloved in whom my soul hath delighted; My spirit have I put upon him, And he shall proclaim to the nations judgement. [6] He shall not dispute, nor cry out;
And no man shall hear his voice in the marketplace.

[7] 611 And a bruised reed shall he not break, And a smoking lamp612 shall he not extinguish, Until he shall bring forth judgement unto victory.

[8] 613 And the nations shall rejoice in his name.614

[9] 615 And in those days Jesus went out to the mountain that he might pray, and he [10] spent the night616 there in prayer to God. 617 And when the morning was come, he called the disciples. 618 And he went towards the sea: and there followed him much people [11] from Galilee that he might pray,619 [12] and from Judæa, and from Jerusalem, and from beyond Jordan, and from Tyre, and from Sidon, and from Decapolis; and great multitudes came unto him, which had heard what he did. 621 And he spake to his disciples to bring him the boat because of the multitudes, that they [13] might not throng him. 622 And he healed many, so that they were almost falling on [Arabic, p. 31] him623 on account of their seeking to get near him. And624 those that had [14] plagues and unclean spirits,625 as soon as they beheld him, would fall, and [15] cry out, and say, Thou art the Son of God. 626 And he rebuked them much, that they [16] should not make him known. 627 And those that were under the constraint of628 unclean [17] spirits were healed. 629 And all of the crowd were seeking to come near630 him; because power went out from him, and he healed them all.

[18, 19] 631 And when Jesus saw the multitudes, he went up to the mountain. 632 And he called his disciples, and chose from them twelve; and they are those whom he named [20] apostles: 633 Simon, whom he named Cephas, and Andrew his brother, and James and [21] John, and Philip

611 Matt. xii. 20.
612 Or, wick.
613 Matt. xii. 21.
614 The Arab. might also mean, And he shall preach (the good tidings) to the peoples in his name (cf. § 22, 47, note).
616 This phrase, in this case adopted from the Syriac, really means, in Arab., morning found him.
618 Mark iii. 7.
619 It must be remembered that we have here only one ms. The Arabic words for Galileæ and for mountain are very similar.
620 The words that he might pray have therefore probably made their way here by some error from § 8, 9, above.
621 Matt. v. 1a.
623 Or, troubled with.
625 This is the meaning of the Arabic word, as it is the primary meaning of the Syriac; but in this work a number of words meaning approach are used (and generally translated) in the sense of touch. The commonest word so used is that in § 12, 13 (cf. also § 12, 35).
and Bartholomew, Matthew and Thomas, and James the son [22] of Alphæus, and Simon which was called the Zealot, Judas the son of James, [23] and Judas the Iscariot, being he that had betrayed him. 636. And Jesus went down with them and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and the great [24] multitude of people. And these twelve he chose to be with him, and that he might [25] send them to preach, and to have power to heal the sick and to cast out devils.

Then he lifted up his eyes unto them, and opened his mouth, and taught them, and said,

Blessed are the poor in spirit: for the kingdom of heaven is theirs.
Blessed are the sorrowful: for they shall be comforted.
Blessed are the humble: for they shall inherit the earth.
Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be satisfied.
Blessed are the merciful: for on them shall be mercy.
Blessed are the pure in their hearts: for they shall see God.
Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the sons of God.
Blessed are they that were persecuted for righteousness’ sake: for the kingdom of heaven is theirs.

Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and separate you from them, and persecute you, and reproach you, and shall speak against you with all evil talk, for my sake, falsely. Then rejoice and be glad, for your reward is great in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets before you.

But woe unto you rich! for ye have received your consolation.
Woe unto you that are satisfied! ye shall hunger.
Woe unto you that laugh now! ye shall weep and be sad.
Woe unto you when men praise you! for so did their fathers use to do to the false prophets.

634 Luke vi. 15.
635 Luke vi. 16.
636 So Vat. ms., followed by Ciasca (cf. Sin.). Borg. ms. has he that was betraying or was a traitor (cf. Peshitta).
638 Mark iii. 14.
640 Matt. v. 2.
641 Matt. v. 3.
642 Matt. v. 4.
643 Matt. v. 5.
644 Matt. v. 6.
645 Matt. v. 7.
646 Matt. v. 8.
647 Matt. v. 9.
648 Matt. v. 10.
649 This word, the ordinary meaning of which is expel, is freely used by our translator in the sense of persecute.
651 Matt. v. 11b.
652 Matt. v. 12.
[40] Unto you do I say, ye which hear, Ye are the salt of the earth: if then the salt become
tasteless, wherewith shall it be salted? For any purpose it is of no use, but [41] is thrown outside,
and men tread upon it. 658Ye are the light of the world. It is [42] impossible that a city built on a
mountain should be hid. 659Neither do they light a lamp and place it under a bushel, but on the
lamp-stand, and it giveth light to all [43] who are in the house. 660So shall[661] your light shine before
men, that they may see [44] your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven. 662There
is nothing [45] secret that shall not be revealed, or hidden that shall not be known. 663Whoever hath
ears that hear, let him hear.

[46] [664]Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets; I came not to destroy, [47] but
to complete. 665Verily I say unto you, Until heaven and earth shall pass, there [Arabic, p. 33] shall
not pass one point or one letter of the law, until all of it shall be [48] accomplished. 666Every one
who shall violate now one of these small commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called
lacking in the kingdom of heaven: every one that shall do and teach shall667 be called great in the
kingdom [49] of heaven. 668I say unto you now, unless your righteousness abound more than that
of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven.

[50] [669]Ye have heard that it was said to the ancients, Do not kill; and every one that [51] killeth
is worthy of the judgement. 670But I say unto you that every one who is angry with his brother
without a cause is worthy of the judgement; and every one that saith to his brother, Thou foul one,
is condemned671 by the synagogue; and whosoever [52] saith to him, Thou fool, is worthy of the
fire of Gehenna. 672If thou art now offering thy gift at the altar, and rememberest there that thy
brother hath conceived [53] against thee any grudge, 673leave thy gift at the altar, and go first and
satisfy thy [54] brother, and then return and offer thy gift. 674Join675 thine adversary quickly, 676and
while thou art still with him in the way, give a ransom and free thyself from him; [55] lest thine
adversary deliver thee to the judge, 677and the judge deliver thee to the tax-collector, [56] and thou

656 Luke vi. 27.
657 Matt. v. 13.
659 Matt. v. 15.
660 Matt. v. 16.
661 Or, let (cf. § 4, 20, note).
662 Mark iv. 22.
663 Mark iv. 23.
664 Matt. v. 17.
665 Matt. v. 18.
666 Matt. v. 19.
667 Lit. this (man) shall.
668 Matt. v. 20.
669 Matt. v. 21.
670 Matt. v. 22.
671 See § 10, 13, note.
672 Matt. v. 23.
673 Matt. v. 24.
674 Matt. v. 25a.
675 The text is rather uncertain.
676 Luke xii. 58a.
677 Matt. v. 25c.
fall into prison. 678And verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt not go out thence until thou payest the last farthing.

[57, 58] 679Ye have heard that it was said, Do not commit adultery: 680but I now say unto you, that every one that looketh at a woman lusting after her hath forthwith already [59] [Arabic, p. 34] committed adultery with her in his heart. 681If thy right eye injure thee, put it out and cast it from thee; for it is preferable for thee that one of thy [60] members should perish, and not thy whole body go into the fire of hell. 682And if thy right hand injure thee, cut it off and cast it from thee; and it is better for thee that [61] one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body fall into Gehenna. 683It was said that he that putteth away his wife should give her a writing of divorcement: [62] 684but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, except for the cause of adultery, hath made it lawful for her to commit adultery: and whosoever taketh one that is put away committeth adultery.

Section IX.

[1] 686Ye have heard also that it was said unto the ancients, Lie not, but perform unto [2] God in thy oaths: 687but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it [3] is God’s throne; nor by the earth, for it is a footstool under his feet; nor yet by [4] Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. 688Neither shalt thou swear by thy [5] head, for thou canst not make in it one lock of hair black or white. 689But your word shall be either Yea or Nay, and what is in excess of this is of the evil one.

[6, 7] 692Ye have heard that it was said, Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth: 693but I say unto you, Stand not in opposition to the evil; 694but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right [8] cheek, turn to him also the other. 695And he that would sue thee, and take thy tunic, [9] leave to him also thy wrapper. 696And whosoever compelleth thee one mile, go with [10] [Arabic, p. 35] him twain.
And he that asketh thee, give unto him: 

but I say unto you, Love your enemies, and pray for those that curse you, and deal well with those that hate you, and pray for those who take you with violence and persecute you; [14] ye may be sons of your heavenly Father, who maketh his sun to rise on the good and the evil, and sendeth down his rain on the righteous and the [15] unrighteous. 

If ye love them that love you, what reward shall ye have? for the publicans [16] and sinners also love those that love them. 

And if ye do a kindness to those [17] who treat you well, where is your superiority? for sinners also do likewise. 

And if ye lend to him of whom ye hope for a reward, where is your superiority? for the sinners also lend to sinners, seeking recompense from them. 

But love your enemies, and do good to them, and lend, and cut not off the hope of any man; that your reward may be great, and ye may be the children of the Highest: for he is lenient towards the wicked and the ungrateful. 

Be ye merciful, even as your Father also is [20] merciful. 

And if ye inquire for the good of your brethren only, what more have ye done than others? is not this the conduct of the publicans also? 

Be ye now perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Consider your alms; do them not before men to let them see you: and if it be not [23] so, ye have no reward before your Father which is in the heavens.

When thou givest an alms now, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as do the people of hypocrisy, [Arabic, p. 36] in the synagogues and the marketplaces, that men may praise them. And ye desire that men should do to you, so do ye also to them.

We shall only occasionally reproduce the peculiarity.

Matt. vi. 42.

Or, punish.


Matt. v. 43.

Matt. v. 44.

Matt. v. 45.

Matt. v. 46.

Luke vi. 32b.


Luke vi. 34.

Or, return.

Matt. v. 47.

Matt. v. 48.

Or, to be given back as much by.

Luke vi. 35.

Luke vi. 36.

Matt. vi. 1.

A clumsy phrase.

Matt. vi. 2.

Matt. vi. 3.

Matt. vi. 4.

Our translator is continually using this word (cf. § 9, 23) where the context and the originals require then or therefore.
And whenever thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites, who love to stand in the synagogues and in the corners of the marketplaces for prayers, that men may behold them. 272 And verily say I unto you, They have received their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and fasten thy door, and pray to thy Father in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. 283 And whenever ye pray, be not babblers, as the heathen; for they think that by the 29 abundance of their words they shall be heard. 274 Then be not ye now like unto them: 30 for your Father knoweth your request before ye ask him. 275 One of his disciples said 31 unto him, Our Lord, teach us to pray, as John taught his disciples. 276 Jesus said unto 32 them, Thus now pray ye now:

[39] 278 When ye fast, do not frown, as the hypocrites; for they make their faces austere, that they may be seen of men. 279 Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 280 But when thou fastest, wash thy face and anoint thy head; 281 that thou make not an appearance to men of fasting, but to thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee.

[43] 282 Be not agitated, little flock; for your Father hath delighted to give you the kingdom.

721 Matt. vi. 5.
722 Matt. vi. 6.
723 Matt. vi. 7.
724 Matt. vi. 8.
725 Luke xi. 1b.
726 Luke xi. 2a.
727 The Arabic text makes Matthew begin here.
728 Matt. vi. 9.
729 Matt. vi. 10.
730 The text as printed reads, That thy will may be (done); but it is to be explained as a (very common grammatical)
transcriptional error. The Cur., however, has and.
731 Matt. vi. 11.
732 Matt. vi. 12.
733 Matt. vi. 13.
734 Lit. unto the age of the ages.
736 Or, folly; and so in following verse.
737 Matt. vi. 15.
738 Matt. vi. 16.
739 Or, shew to.
740 Matt. vi. 17.
741 Matt. vi. 18.
742 Luke xii. 32.
743 Luke xii. 33a.
744 Matt. vi. 19.
and steal: 745but lay up for yourselves treasure in heaven, where [46] moth and worm do not corrupt, nor thieves break through nor steal: 746for where your [47] treasure is, there also will your heart be. 747The lamp of the body is the eye: if then 748 [48] thine eye now be sound, thy whole body also shall be light. 749But if thine eye be evil, all thy body shall be dark. And if the light which is in thee is darkness, how [49] great is 750 thy darkness! 751Be watchful that the light which is in thee be not darkness. [50] 752Because that, if thy whole body is light, and have no part dark, it shall all be light, as the lamp giveth light to thee with its flame.

Section X.

[1] [Arabic, p. 38] 753No man can serve two masters; and that because it is necessary that he hate one of them and love the other, and honour one of them and despise the [2] other. 754Ye cannot serve God and possessions. And because of this I say unto you, Be not anxious for yourselves, 755 what ye shall eat and what ye shall drink; neither for your bodies, what ye shall put on. Is not the life better than the food, and the body [3] than the raiment? 756Consider the birds of the heaven, which sow not, nor reap, nor store in barns; and yet your Father which is in heaven feedeth them. Are not ye [4] better than they? 757Who of you when he trieth is able to add to his stature one [5] cubit? 758If then ye are not able for a small thing, why are ye anxious about the [6, 7] rest? 759Consider the wild lily, how it grows, although it toils not, nor spins; 760and I say unto you that Solomon in the greatness of his glory was not clothed like one of [8] them. 761And if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow [9] is cast 762 into the oven, how much more shall be unto you, O ye of little faith! 763Be not anxious, so as to say, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, With [10] what shall we be clothed? 764Neither let your minds be perplexed in this: 765all these things the nations of the world seek; and your Father which is in heaven knoweth

745 Matt. vi. 20.
746 Matt. vi. 21.
747 Matt. vi. 22.
748 Or, for if.
749 Matt. vi. 23.
750 Or, will be.
751 Luke xi. 35.
752 Luke xi. 36.
753 Matt. vi. 24.
754 Matt. vi. 25.
755 Or, your souls; or, your lives.
757 Matt. vi. 27.
759 Matt. vi. 28.
760 Matt. vi. 29.
761 Matt. vi. 30.
762 Lit. falleth (cf. Syriac).
763 Matt. vi. 31.
764 Luke xii. 29b.
765 Matt. vi. 32.
[11] your need of all these things. 766Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; [12] [Arabic, p. 39] and all these shall come to you as something additional for you. 767Be not anxious for the morrow; for the morrow shall be anxious for what belongs to it. Sufficient unto the day is its evil.

[13] 768Judge not, that ye be not judged: 769condemn770 not, that ye be not condemned: [14] 771forgive, and it shall be forgiven you: release, and ye shall be released: give, that ye may be given unto; with good measure, abundant, full, they shall thrust772 into your [15] bosoms. 773With what measure ye measure it shall be measured to you. See to it what ye hear: with what measure ye measure it shall be measured to you; and ye [16] shall be given more. 774I say unto those that hear, He that hath shall be given unto; and he that hath not, that which he regards775 as his shall be taken from him.

[17] 776And he spake unto them a parable, Can a blind man haply guide a blind man? [18] shall777 they not both fall into a hollow? 778A disciple is not better than his master; [19] every perfect man shall be as his master. 778Why lookest thou at the mote which is in the eye of thy brother, but considerest not the column that is in thine own eye? [20] 780Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, I will take out the mote from thine eye; and the column which is in thine eye thou seest not? Thou hypocrite, take out first the column from thine eye; and then shalt thou see to take out the mote from the eye of thy brother.

[21] 781Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest they trample them with their feet, and return and wound you.

[22] 782And he said unto them, Who of you, that hath a friend, goeth to him at midnight, [23] and saith unto him, My friend, lend me three loaves; 783for a friend hath come [24] to me from a journey, and I have nothing to offer to him: 784and that friend shall [Arabic, p. 40] answer him from within, and say unto him, Trouble me not; for the door is shut, and my children are with me in bed, and I cannot rise and give thee? [25] 785And verily I say unto you, If he will not give him because

766 Matt. vi. 33.
767 Matt. vi. 34.
768 Matt. vii. 1.
769 Luke vi. 37b.
772 Luke viii. 18b. Our translator uses the same word in § 50, 5=Luke xxiii. 8b; and in both cases it represents the same word in the Syriac versions.
773 Mark iv. 24b.
774 Mark iv. 25.
775 cf. Luke viii. 18b. The word means to contend successfully, but is used throughout by our translator in the sense of condemn.
777 Or, Do.
779 Luke vi. 41.
780 Luke vi. 42.
781 Matt. vii. 6.
782 Luke xi. 5.
784 Luke xi. 7.
of friendship, yet because [26] of his importunity he will rise and give him what he seeketh. 786 And I also say unto you, Ask, and ye shall be given unto; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be [27] opened unto you. 787 Every one that asketh receiveth, and he that seeketh findeth, and [28] he that knocketh, it shall be opened to him. 788 What father of you, shall his son ask for bread—will he, think you, give him a stone? 789 and if he ask of him a fish, will he, [29] think you, 790 instead of the fish give him a serpent? and if he ask him for an egg, will [30] he, think you, extend to him a scorpion? 791 If ye then, although being evil, know the gifts which are good, and give them to your children, how much more shall your [31] Father which is in heaven give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? 792 Whosoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: this is the law and the prophets.

[32] 793 Enter794 ye by the narrow gate; for the wide gate and the broad way lead to destruction, [33] and many they be which go therein. 795 How narrow is the gate and straitened the way leading to life! and few be they that find it.

[34] 796 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s797 clothing, while within [35] they are ravening wolves. 798 But by their fruits ye shall know them. 799 For every tree is known by its fruit. For figs are not gathered800 of thorns, neither are grapes plucked of [36] briers. 801 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit, but the evil tree bringeth [37] [Arabic, p. 41] forth evil fruit. 802 The good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can the [38] evil tree bring forth good fruit. 803 The good man from the good treasures that are in his heart bringeth forth good things; and the evil man from the evil treasures that are in his heart bringeth forth evil things: and from the overflowings of the [39] heart the lips speak. 804 Every tree that beareth not good fruit is cut down and cast [40, 41] into the fire. 805 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 806 Not all that say unto me, My Lord, my Lord, shall enter the kingdom of the heavens; but he that doeth [42] the will of my Father which is in heaven. 807 Many shall say unto me in that day, My Lord, my Lord, did

786 Luke xi. 9.
787 Luke xi. 10.
788 Luke xi. 11.
789 The Arabic might also be rendered, What father of you whom his son asketh for bread, will (think you) give him a stone?
792 Matt. vii. 12.
794 There is nothing about striving. The verb is walaga, which means enter (cf. § 11, 48).
796 Matt. vii. 15.
797 Or, lamby'.
798 Matt. vii. 16a.
799 Luke vi. 44.
800 The verbs might be singular active, but not plural as in Syriac versions (cf., however, § 38, 43, note, end). In the Borg.
801 MS. the nouns are in the accusative.
we not prophesy in thy name, and in thy name cast out [43] devils, and in thy name do many powers? 808 Then shall I say unto them, I never [44] knew you: depart from me, ye servants of iniquity. 809 Every man that cometh unto [45] me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to what he is like: 810 he is like the wise man which built a house, and digged and went deep, and laid the [46] foundations on a rock: 811 and the rain came down, and the rivers overflowed, and the winds blew, and shook that house, and it fell not: for its foundation was laid on [47] rocks. 812 And every one that heareth these my words, and doeth them not, is like [48] the foolish man which built his house on sand, without foundation: 813 and the rain descended, and the rivers overflowed, and the winds blew, and smote upon that house, and it fell: and the fall of it was great.

Section XI.

[1] [Arabic, p. 42] 814 And when Jesus finished these sayings, the multitudes were astonished [2] at his teaching; 815 and that because he was teaching them as one having authority, not as their scribes and the Pharisees.

[3] 816 And when he descended from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

[4] 817 And when Jesus entered Capernaum, the servant of one of the chiefs was in an [5] evil case, and he was precious to him, and he was at the point of death. 818 And he [6] heard of Jesus, and came to him with the elders of the Jews; 819 and he besought him, and said, My Lord, my boy is laid in the house paralysed, 820 and he is suffering grievous [7] torment. 821 And the elders urgently requested of him, and said, He is worthy that [8] this should be done unto him: 822 for he loveth our people, and he also built the synagogue [9, 10] for us. 823 Jesus said unto him, I will come and heal him. 824 That chief answered and said, My Lord, I am not worthy that my roof should shade thee; but it sufficeth [11] that thou speak a word, and my lad shall be healed. 825 And I also am a man in obedience to authority, having under my hand soldiers: 826 and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;
and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant that he do this, [12] and he doeth it. 827 And when Jesus heard that, he marvelled at him, 828 and turned and said unto the multitude that were coming with him, 829 Verily I say unto you, I have [13] not found in Israel the like of this faith. 830 I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall recline with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob [14] [Arabic, p. 43] in the kingdom of heaven: 831 but the children of the kingdom shall be cast [15] forth into the outer darkness: and there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 832 And Jesus said to that chief, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, so shall it be unto thee. [16] 833 And his lad was healed in that hour. And that chief returned to the house and found that sick servant healed.

[17] 834 And the day after, he was going to a city called Nain, and his disciples with him, [18] and a great multitude. 835 And when he was come near the gate of the city, he saw a crowd 836 accompanying one that was dead, the only son of his mother; and his mother was a widow: and there was with her a great multitude of the people of the [19] city. 837 And when Jesus saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep [20] not. 838 And he went and advanced to the bier, and the bearers of it stood still; and [21] he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 839 And that dead man sat up and began [22] to speak; and he gave him to his mother. 840 And fear came on all the people: and they praised God, and said, There hath risen among us a great prophet: and, God [23] hath had regard to his people. 841 And this news concerning him spread in all Judæa, and in all the region which was about them.

[24] 842 And when Jesus saw great multitudes surrounding him, he commanded them to [25] depart to the other side. 843 And while they were going in the way, there came one of the scribes and said unto him, My Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou [26] goest. 844 Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven have [27] nests; but the Son of man hath not a place in which to lay his head. 845 And he said unto another, Follow me. And he said unto him, My Lord, suffer me first to go and [28] bury my father. 846 Jesus said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their dead; but thou, [29] follow me and preach the kingdom of God. 847 And another said unto him, I will follow [Arabic, p. 44] thee, my Lord; but first suffer me to go and salute my

828 Or, it.
829 Matt. viii. 10b.
830 Matt. viii. 11.
831 Matt. viii. 12.
832 Matt. viii. 13.
834 Luke vii. 11.
836 Lit. company.
842 Matt. viii. 18.
844 Matt. viii. 20.
846 Luke ix. 60.
household and [30] come. 848 Jesus said unto him, There is no one who putteth his hand to the plough and looketh behind him, and yet is fit for the kingdom of God.

[31] 850 And he said to them on that day in the evening, Let us go over to the other side [32] of the lake; and he left the multitudes. 852 And Jesus went up and sat in the ship, [33] he and his disciples, and there were with them other ships. 853 And there occurred on the sea a great tempest of whirlwind and wind, and the ship was on the point of [34] sinking from the greatness of the waves. 857 But Jesus was sleeping on a cushion in the stern of the ship; 858 and his disciples came and awoke him, and said unto him, Our Lord, save us; lo, we perish. 859 And he rose, and rebuked the winds and the turbulence of the water, and said to the sea, Be still, for thou art rebuked; 860 and the wind [36] was still, and there was a great calm.

851 And he said unto them, Why are ye thus afraid? and why have ye no faith? 862 And they feared greatly. 863 And they marvelled, and said one to another, Who, think you, is this, who commandeth also the wind and the waves and the sea, and they obey him?

[38] 864 And they departed and came to the country of the Gadarenes, which is on the [39] other side, opposite the land of Galilee. 865 And when he went out of the ship to the land, 866 there met him from among the tombs a man who had a devil for a long time, [40] and wore no clothes, neither dwelt in a house, but among the tombs. 867 And no man was [Arabic, p. 45] able to bind him with chains, 868 because any time that he was bound with chains and fetters he cut the chains and loosened the fetters; 869 and he was snatched away of the devil into the desert, 870 and no man was able to quiet him; and at all times, in the night and in the day, he would be among the tombs and in the mountains; 872 and no man was able to pass by that way; 873 and he would cry out and
wound himself [43] with stones. 874 And when he saw Jesus at a distance, he hastened and worshipped [44] him, and cried with a loud voice and said, 875 What have we to do with thee, Jesus, [45] Son of the most high God? 876 I adjure thee by God, torment me not. And Jesus commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man: and he had suffered 877 a long [46] time since the time when he came into captivity to it. 878 And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? He said unto him, Legion; for there had entered into him many [47] devils. 879 And they besought him that he would not command them to depart into [48] the depths. 880 And there was there a herd of many swine, feeding in the mountain, and those devils besought him to give them leave to enter the swine; and he gave [49] them leave. 881 And the devils went out of the man and entered into the swine. 882 And that herd hastened to the summit and fell down into the midst of the sea, about two [50] thousand, and they were choked in the water. 883 And when the keepers saw what [51] happened, they fled, and told those in the cities and villages. 884 And the people went out to see what had happened; and they came to Jesus, and found the man whose [Arabic, p. 46] devils had gone out, clothed, modest, 885 seated at the feet of Jesus; and they [52] feared. 886 And they reported what they saw, and how the man was healed who had a devil, 887 and concerning those swine also.

Section XII.

[1] 888 And all the multitude of the Gadarenes entreated him to depart from them, because that great fear took hold upon them.

[2, 3] 889 But Jesus went up into the ship, and crossed, and came to his city. 890 And that man from whom the devils went out entreated that he might stay with him; but [4] Jesus sent him away, and said unto him, 891 Return to thy house, and make known what [5] God hath done for thee. 892 And he went, and began to publish in Decapolis 893 what Jesus had done for him; and they all marvelled.

---

874 Mark v. 6.
875 Mark v. 7a; Luke viii. 28b.
876 Mark v. 7c; Luke viii. 29a.
877 Lit. and it was for him.
880 Luke viii. 32.
882 Mark v. 13b.
883 Luke viii. 34.
884 Luke viii. 35.
885 cf. Syriac versions.
886 Luke viii. 36.
887 Mark v. 16b.
889 Matt. ix. 1.
892 Mark v. 20.
893 Lit. the ten cities.
6 And when Jesus had crossed in the ship to that side, a great multitude received [7] him; and they were all looking for him. 85 And a man named Jairus, the chief of the [8] synagogue, fell before the feet of Jesus, 86 and besought him much, and said unto him, I have an only daughter, and she is come nigh unto death; 87 but come and lay thy [9] hand upon her, and she shall live. 88 And Jesus rose, and his disciples, and they followed [10] him. 89 And there joined him a great multitude, and they pressed him.

[11, 12] 90 And a woman, which had a flow of blood for twelve years, 91 had suffered much of many physicians, and spent all that she had, and was not benefited at all, but her [13] trouble increased further. 92 And when she heard of Jesus, she came in the thronging of [14] [Arabic, p. 47] the crowd behind him, and touched 93 his garments; 94 and she thought within [15] herself, If I could reach to touch his garments, I should live. 95 And immediately the fountain of her blood was dried; and she felt in her body that she was healed [16] of her plague. 96 And Jesus straightway knew within himself that power had gone out of him; and he turned to the crowd, and said, Who approached unto my garments? [17] 97 And on their denying, all of them, Simon Cephas and those with him said unto him, Our Master, the multitudes throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, Who approached [18] unto me? 98 And he said, Some one approached unto me; and I knew that [19] power went forth from me. 99 And that woman, when she saw that she was not hid [20] from him, came fearing and agitated (for she knew what had happened to her), 100 and fell down and worshipped him, and told, in the presence of all the people, for what [21] reason she touched him, and how she was healed immediately. 101 And Jesus said unto her, Be of good courage, daughter; thy faith hath made thee alive; depart in peace, and be whole from thy plague.

[22] 102 And while he was yet speaking, there came a man from the house of the chief of the synagogue, and said unto him, Thy daughter hath died; so trouble not the [23] teacher. 103 But Jesus heard, and said unto the father of the maid, Fear not: but believe [24] only, and she shall live. 104 And he suffered no man to go with him, except [25] Simon Cephas, and James, and John the brother of James. 105 And they reached the house of the chief of the synagogue; and he saw them

894 Mark v. 21a; Luke viii. 40b.
896 Mark v. 23a.
897 Matt. ix. 18b.
898 Matt. ix. 19.
899 Mark v. 24b.
900 Mark v. 25.
901 Mark v. 26.
902 Mark v. 27.
903 See § 8, 17, note.
904 Mark v. 28.
905 Mark v. 29.
906 Mark v. 30.
907 Luke viii. 45b.
908 Luke viii. 46.
910 Mark v. 33b; Luke viii. 47c.
911 Luke viii. 48; Mark v. 34b.
912 Luke viii. 49.
913 Luke viii. 50.
914 Mark v. 37.
915 Mark v. 38.
agitated, weeping and wailing. [26] And he entered, and said unto them, Why are ye agitated and weeping? the [27] maid hath not died, but she is sleeping. [917] And they laughed at him, for [28] they knew that she had died. [918] And he put every man forth without, and took the father of the maid, and her mother, and Simon, and James, and John, and [29] entered into the place where the maid was laid. [919] And he took hold of the hand of the maid, and said unto her, Maid, arise. [920] And her spirit returned, and straightway [30] she arose and walked: [921] and she was about twelve years of age. [922] And he commanded [31] that there should be given to her something to eat. [923] And her father wondered greatly: [32] and he warned them that they should tell no man what had happened. [924] And this report spread in all that land.

[33] And when Jesus crossed over from there, there joined him two blind men, crying [34] out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. [925] And when he came to the house, those two blind men came to him: and Jesus said unto them, Believe ye [35] that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, our Lord. [927] Then he touched [36] their eyes, and said, As ye have believed, it shall be unto you. [929] And immediately their eyes were opened. And Jesus forbade them, and said, See that no man know. [37] But they went out and published the news in all that land.

[38] [931] And when Jesus went out, they brought to him a dumb man having a devil. [39] And on the going out of the devil that dumb man spake. And the multitudes marvelled, and said, It was never so seen in Israel.

[40] [933] And Jesus was going about in all the cities and in the villages, and teaching in their synagogues, and proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease [41] [Arabic, p. 49] and sickness; and many followed him. [934] And when Jesus saw the multitudes, he had compassion on them, for they were wearied and scattered, [935] as sheep [42] that have no shepherd. [936] And he called his twelve disciples, and gave them power and [43] much authority over all devils and diseases; [937] and sent them two and two, that they [44] might proclaim the kingdom of God, and

916 Mark v. 39.
917 Luke viii. 53.
918 Mark v. 40b.
919 Mark v. 41.
921 Mark v. 42b.
923 Luke viii. 56.
925 Matt. ix. 27.
926 Matt. ix. 28.
927 Matt. ix. 29.
928 Lit. went forward to (cf. § 8, 17, note).
929 Matt. ix. 30.
930 Matt. ix. 31.
931 Matt. ix. 32.
932 Matt. ix. 33.
933 Matt. ix. 35.
934 Matt. ix. 36.
935 Lit. cast away (cf. meanings of Syriac word).
936 Matt. x. 1a; Luke ix. 1b.
to heal the sick. 938 And he charged them, and said, Walk not in the way of the heathen, nor enter into the cities of the Samaritans. 939 [45, 46] 940 Go especially unto the sheep that are lost of the sons of Israel. 941 And [47] when ye go, proclaim and say, The kingdom of heaven is come near. 942 And heal the sick, and cleanse the lepers, and cast out the devils: freely ye have received, freely [48, 49] give. 943 Get you not gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses; 944 and take nothing for the way, except a staff only; nor bag, nor bread; neither shall ye have two tunics, nor shoes, nor staff, but be shod with sandals; 945 for the labourer is worthy of his food. 951 946 And whatever city or village ye enter, inquire who is worthy in it, and there be until [52, 53] ye go out. 947 And when ye enter into the house, ask for the peace of the house: and if the house is worthy, your peace shall come upon it; 948 but if it is not worthy, your [54] peace shall return unto you. 949 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your sayings, when ye go out from that house, or from that village, shake off the dust [55] [Arabic, p. 50] that is under your feet against them for a testimony. 950 And verily I say unto you, To the land of Sodom and Gomorrah there shall be rest in the day of judgement, rather than to that city.

Section XIII.

[1] 951 I am sending you as lambs among wolves: be ye now wise as serpents, and [2] harmless as doves. 952 Beware of men: they shall deliver you to the councils of the [3] magistrates, and scourge you in their synagogues; 954 and shall bring you before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and against the nations. [4] 955 And when they deliver you up, be not anxious, nor consider beforehand, what ye [5] shall say; but ye shall be given in that hour what ye ought to speak. 959 Ye do not [6] speak, but the Spirit of your Father speaketh in you. 959 The

938 Matt. x. 5.
939 § 34, 40, shows that this Arabic form may be so translated.
940 Matt. x. 6.
941 Matt. x. 7.
942 Matt. x. 8.
943 Matt. x. 9f.
944 Mark vi. 8b; Luke ix. 3.
945 Matt. x. 10c; Mark vi. 9a.
946 Matt. x. 10d.
947 Matt. x. 11.
948 Matt. x. 12; Matt. x. 13.
949 Matt. x. 14a; Mark vi. 11b.
950 Matt. x. 15.
951 Matt. x. 16.
952 The word is occasionally used in this sense, but ordinarily means sound, unhurt.
953 Matt. x. 17.
954 Matt. x. 18.
955 Matt. x. 19.
956 From this point down to Matt. x. 27a, is assigned by Vat. ms. to Mark.
957 Borg. ms. reads, but what ye are granted ye shall speak, and ye shall be given in, etc., and there seems to be a trace of this reading in Ciasca’s text.
958 Matt. x. 20.
959 Matt. x. 21.
brother shall deliver up his brother to death, and the father his son; and the sons shall rise against their [7] parents, and put them to death. 960 And ye shall be hated of every man because of [8] my name; but he that endureth unto the end of the matter shall be saved. 961 962 When they expel you from this city, flee to another. Verily I say unto you, Ye shall not finish all the cities of the people of Israel, until the Son of man come.

[9, 10] 963 A disciple is not superior to his lord, nor a servant to his master. 964 For it is enough then for the disciple that he be as his lord, and the servant as his master. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebul, how much more the people [11] of his house! 965 Fear them not therefore: 966 for there is nothing covered, that shall [12] [Arabic, p. 51] not be revealed; nor hid, that shall not be disclosed and published. 967 What I say unto you in the darkness, speak ye in the light; and what ye have told [13] secretly in the ears in closets, let it be proclaimed on the house tops.

968 I say unto you now, my beloved, Be not agitated at 969 those who kill the body, but have no power to [14] kill the soul. I will inform you whom ye shall fear: him 970 which is able to destroy [15] soul and body in hell. 971 Yea, I say unto you, Be afraid of him especially. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing in a bond? 972 and one of them shall not fall on the [16] ground without your Father. 973 But what concerns you: even the hair of your heads [17, 18] also is numbered. 974 Fear not therefore; ye are better than many sparrows. 975 Every man who confesseth me now before men, I also will confess him before my Father [19] which is in heaven; 976 but whosoever denieth me before men, I also will deny him before my Father which is in heaven.

[20] 977 Think ye that I am come to cast peace into the earth? I came not to cast peace, [21] but to cast dissension. 978 Henceforth there shall be five in one house, three of them [22] disagreeing with two, and the two with the three. 979 The father shall become hostile to his son, and the son to his father; and the mother to her daughter, and the daughter to her mother; and the mother in law to her daughter in law, and the daughter [23] in law to her mother in law: 980 and a man’s enemies

960 Matt. x. 22.
961 See note to § 1, 78.
962 Matt. x. 23.
963 Matt. x. 24.
964 Matt. x. 25.
966 See note to § 9, 21.
967 Matt. x. 27a; Luke xii. 3b.
968 Luke xii. 4a; Luke x. 28b.
969 Perhaps this Arabic word is a copyist’s error for that used a farthing few lines further down in Luke xii. 5, the Arabic words being very similar; but see note on § 1, 14.
970 Syriac.
971 Luke xii. 5; Matt. x. 29.
972 The Vat. ms., like the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, omits for a farthing, retaining in a bond. The two phrases are simply different explanations of the same Syriac consonants. These are really the naturalised Greek word rendered farthing in Eng. version; but they also form a Syriac word meaning bond.
973 Matt. x. 30.
974 Matt. x. 31.
975 Matt. x. 32.
976 Matt. x. 33.
977 Luke xii. 51.
978 Luke xii. 52.
979 Luke xii. 53.
980 Matt. x. 36.
shall be the people of his house. [24] 981Whosoever loveth father or mother better than me is not worthy of me; and whosoever [Arabic, p. 52] loveth son or daughter more than his love of me is not worthy of me. [25] 982And every one that doth not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of [26] me. 983Whosoever findeth his life shall lose it; and whosoever loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

[27] 984And whosoever receiveth you receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me receiveth [28] him that sent me. 987And whosoever receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall take a prophet’s reward; and whosoever shall receive a righteous man [29] in the name of a righteous man shall take a righteous man’s reward. 990And every one that shall give to drink to one of these least ones a drink of water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

[30] 991And when Jesus finished charging his twelve disciples, he removed thence to [31] teach and preach in their cities. 992And while they were going in the way they entered into a certain village; and a woman named Martha entertained him in her house. [32] 993And she had a sister named Mary, and she came and sat at the feet of our Lord, [33] and heard his sayings. 994But Martha was disquieted by much serving; and she came and said unto him, My Lord, givest thou no heed that my sister left me alone to [34] serve? speak to her that she help me. 995Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, [35] Martha, thou art solicitous and impatient on account of many things: but what is sought is one thing. But Mary hath chosen for herself a good portion, and that which shall not be taken from her.

[36] 999And the apostles went forth, and preached to the people that they might repent. [37] 999And they cast out many devils, and anointed many sick with oil, and healed them. [38, 39] 1000And the disciples of John told him of all these things. 1002And when John heard in [Arabic, p. 53] the prison of the doings of the Messiah, he called two of his disciples, and sent them to Jesus, and said, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for [40] another? 1003And they came to Jesus, and said unto

---

981 Matt. x. 37.
982 Matt. x. 38.
983 Matt. x. 39.
984 Or, soul.
985 Or, soul.
986 Matt. x. 40.
987 Matt. x. 41.
988 Or, receive.
989 Or, receive.
990 Matt. x. 42a; Mark ix. 41b.
991 Matt. xi. 1.
992 Luke x. 38.
995 Luke x. 41.
996 Or, agitated.
997 Luke x. 42.
998 Mark vi. 12.
999 Mark vi. 13.
1001 Lit. And his disciples told John, as in the Greek, etc.
1002 Matt. xi. 2a; Luke vii. 19.
him, John the Baptist hath sent [41] us unto thee, and said, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another? [1004] And in that hour he cured many of diseases, and of plagues of an evil spirit; and he gave sight [42] to many blind. [1005] Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and tell John everything ye have seen and heard: the blind see, and the lame walk, and the lepers are cleansed, and the blind [1006] hear, and the dead rise, and the poor have the gospel preached to [43] them. [1007] And blessed is he who doubteth not in me.

[44] [1008] And when John’s disciples departed, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? a reed shaken with the [45] winds? [1009] And if not, then what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that are in magnificent garments and in voluptuousness are in the abode [46] of kings. [1010] And if not, then what went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say unto [47] you, and more than a prophet. [1011] This is he of whom it is written,

I am sending my messenger before thy face
To prepare the way before thee.

Section XIV.

[1] [1012] Verily I say unto you, There hath not arisen among those whom women have borne a greater than John the Baptist; but he that is little now in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

[2] [Arabic, p. 54] [1013] And all the people which heard, and the publicans, justified [1014] God, for [3] they had been baptized with the baptism of John. [1015] But the Pharisees and the scribes wronged [1016] the purpose of God in themselves, in that they were not baptized of [4] him. [1017] And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven is [5] snatched away by violence. [1018] The law and the prophets were until John; and after that, the kingdom of God is preached, and all press to enter it: [1019] and they that exert themselves [6, 7] snatch it away. [1020] All the prophets and the law

1006 A different word from that used in the preceding verse. It is either an Arabic copyist’s error for the word for deaf used in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, or a careless blunder.
1011 Luke vii. 27.
1012 Matt. xi. 11.
1014 Syriac. In Arabic the word ordinarily means believed.
1016 See below, § 20, 28, note.
1017 Matt. xi. 12a.
1018 Luke xvi. 16.
1019 Matt. xi. 12b.
1020 Matt. xi. 13.
until John prophesied. 1023 And if ye [8] will, then receive it, that he is Elijah, which is to come. 1024 Whosoever hath ears that hear [9] let him hear. 1025 Easier is the perishing of heaven and earth, than the passing away of [10] one point of the law. 1026 To whom then shall I liken the people of this generation, [11] to whom are they like? 1027 They are like the children sitting in the market, which call to their companions, and say, We sang to you, and ye danced not; we wailed to you, [12] and ye wept not. 1028 John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; [13] and ye said, He hath demons; 1029 and the Son of man came eating and drinking; and ye said, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a drinker of wine, and an associate of publicans [14, 15] and sinners! And wisdom was justified of all her children. 1030 And when he said that, they came to the house. And there gathered unto him again multitudes, [16] so that they found not bread to eat. 1031 And while he was casting out a devil which was dumb, when he cast out that devil, that dumb man spake. And the multitudes [17] [Arabic, p. 55] marvelled. 1032 And the Pharisees, when they heard, said, This man doth not cast out the devils, except by Beelzebul the chief of the demons, which is in him. [18, 19] 1033 And others requested of him a sign from heaven, to tempt him. 1034 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them in parables, Every kingdom that withstandeth itself shall become desolate; and every house or city that disagreeth with itself shall not [20] stand: 1035 and if a devil cast out a devil, he withstandeth himself; neither shall he be [21] able to stand, but his end shall be. 1036 Then how now shall his kingdom stand? for ye [22] said that I cast out devils by Beelzebul. 1037 And if I by Beelzebul cast out the devils, then your children, by what do they cast them out? And for this cause they shall [23] be judges against you. 1038 But if I by the Spirit of God cast out devils, then the kingdom [24] of God is come near unto you. 1039 Or how can a man enter into the house of a valiant man, and seize his garments? 1040 if he do not beforehand secure himself from [25] that valiant man? and then will he cut off his house. 1041 But when the valiant man is [26] armed, guarding his house, his possessions are in peace. 1042 But if one come who is more valiant

1024 Matt. xi. 15.  
1027 See § 1, 49, note.  
1028 Luke vii. 32.  
1030 Luke vii. 34.  
1031 Luke vii. 35.  
1032 Mark iii. 20, and verse 19b.  
1034 Matt. xii. 24.  
1035 Luke xi. 16.  
1036 Matt. xii. 25.  
1037 Matt. xii. 26a.  
1038 Mark iii. 26b; Matt. xii. 26b.  
1039 Luke xi. 18b; Matt. xii. 27.  
1040 Matt. xii. 28.  
1041 Matt. xii. 29.  
1042 The word used in the Syriac versions (Pesh. and Cur.) means garments as well as utensils, and the Arabic translator has chosen the wrong meaning (cf. § 42, 44).  
1043 Certain derivatives from the same root signify bind, but hardly this word.  
1044 The two Arab. MSS. differ in this word, but the meaning is about the same. Perhaps both are corrupt.  
1046 Luke xi. 22.
than he, he overcometh him, and taketh his whole armour, on which [27] he relieth, and divideth his spoil. 1048 Whosoever is not with me is against me; and [28] whosoever gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. 1049 For this reason I say unto you, [Arabic, p. 56] that all sins and blasphemies with which men blaspheme shall be forgiven [29] them: 1047 but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, there is no [30] forgiveness for him for ever, but he is deserving of eternal punishment: 1048 because they [31] said that he had an unclean spirit. 1049 And he said also, Every one that speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to [32] come. 1050 Either ye must make a good tree [33] and its fruit good; or ye must make an evil [33] tree [34] and its fruit evil: for the tree is known by its fruit. 1051 Ye children of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? from the overflowings of the heart the mouth [34] speaketh. 1052 The good man from the good treasures which are in his heart bringeth forth good things; and the wicked man from the evil treasures which are in his [35] heart bringeth forth evils. 1053 I say unto you, that every idle word which men shall [36] speak, they shall give an answer for in the day of judgement: 1054 for by thy sayings thou shalt be justified, and by thy sayings thou shalt be judged.

[37] 1055 And he said to the multitudes, When ye see the clouds appear from the west, [38] straightway ye say that there cometh rain; and so it cometh to pass. 1056 And when [39] the south wind bloweth, ye say that there will be heat; and it cometh to pass. 1057 And when the evening is come, ye say, It will be fair weather, for the heaven has become [40] red. 1058 And in the morning ye say, To-day there will be severe weather, for the redness [Arabic, p. 57] of the heaven is paling. 1059 Ye hypocrites, ye know to examine the face of the heaven and the earth; but the signs of this time ye know not to discern.

[41] 1060 Then they brought to him one possessed of a demon, dumb and blind; and he [42] healed him, so that the dumb and blind began to speak and see. 1061 And all the multitudes wondered, and said, Is this, think you, the son of David?

---

1045 Luke xi. 23.
1046 Mark iii. 28.
1047 Mark iii. 29.
1048 Mark iii. 30.
1049 Matt. xii. 32.
1050 Matt. xii. 33.
1051 Or, a tree good.
1052 Or, a tree evil.
1053 Matt. xii. 34.
1055 Matt. xii. 36.
1056 Matt. xii. 37.
1057 Luke xii. 54.
1058 Luke xii. 55.
1059 Matt. xvi. 2b.
1060 Matt. xvi. 3.
1061 Matt. xvi. 4; this is reckoned to verse 3 in the Greek.
1062 Matt. xii. 22.
1063 Matt. xii. 23.
Section XV.

[1] 1072 Jesus answered and said unto him, Simon, I have something to say unto thee. And [2] he said unto him, Say on, my Master. 1073 Jesus said unto him, There were two debtors [Arabic, p. 58] to one creditor; and one of them owed five hundred pence, and the other [3] owed fifty pence. 1074 And because they had not wherewith to pay, he forgave [4] them both. Which of them ought to love him more? 1075 Simon answered and said, I suppose, he to whom he forgave most. Jesus said unto him, Thou hast judged rightly. [5] 1076 And he turned to that woman, and said to Simon, Dost thou see this woman? I entered into thy dwelling, and thou gavest me not water to wash my feet: but this [6] woman hath bathed my feet with her tears, and dried them with her hair. 1078 And thou kissedst me not: but this woman, since she entered, hath not ceased to kiss my [7] feet. 1080 And thou anointedst not my head with oil: 1081 but this woman hath anointed [8] my feet with
sweet ointment.  

And for this, I say unto thee, Her many sins are forgiven her, because she loved much; for he to whom little is forgiven loveth little.  

And he said unto that woman, Thy sins are forgiven thee.  

And those that were invited [11] began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?  

And Jesus said to that woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

[12] And many believed in him when they saw the signs which he was doing.  

But Jesus did not trust himself to them, for he knew every man, and he needed not any man to testify to him concerning every man; for he knew what was in man.

[15] And after that, Jesus set apart from his disciples other seventy, and sent them two and two before his face to every region and city whither he was purposing to [16] go.  

And he said unto them, The harvest is abundant, and the labourers are few:  

entreat now the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.  

Go [18] [Arabic, p. 59] ye: and lo, I am sending you as lambs among wolves.  

Take not with you [19] purses, nor a wallet, nor shoes; neither salute any man in the way.  

And [20] whatsoever house ye enter, first salute that house: and if there be there a son of peace, [21] let your peace rest upon him; but if there be not, your peace shall return to you.  

And be ye in that house eating and drinking what they have;  

for the labourer is worthy of [22] his hire.  

And remove not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, [23] and they receive you, eat what is presented to you:  

and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come near unto you.  

But whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go out into the market, and say, [25]  

Even the dust that clave to our feet from your city, we shake off against you; but [26] know this, that the kingdom of God is come near unto you.  

I say unto you, that for Sodom there shall be quiet in the day of judgement, but there shall not be for [27] that city.  

Then began Jesus to rebuke the cities in

---

1082 Same word in Arabic.
1083 Luke vii. 47.
1087 John ii. 23b.
1088 John ii. 24.
1089 The meaning is not apparent.
1090 John ii. 25.
1091 Luke x. 1.
1092 Luke x. 2.
1093 Luke x. 3.
1094 Luke x. 4.
1095 Luke x. 5.
1097 Luke x. 7.
1098 cf. Syriac versions.
1099 Luke x. 8.
1100 Luke x. 9.
1101 Luke x. 10.
1102 Luke x. 11.
1103 The first letter of the word has been lost.
1104 Lit. that, as often in this work.
1105 Luke x. 12.
1106 Matt. xi. 20.
which there had been many [28] mighty works, and they repented not. 1108 And he said, Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! if there had been in Tyre and Sidon the signs which were in [29] thee, it may be that they would have repented in sackcloth and ashes. 1109 Howbeit I say unto you, that for Tyre and Sidon there shall be rest in the day of judgement, [30] more than for you. 1110 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt sink down unto Hades; for if there had been in Sodom the wonders [31] which were in thee, it would have remained until this day. 1112 And now I say unto thee, that for the land of Sodom there shall be quiet in the day of judgement, more than for thee.

[32] [Arabic, p. 60] 1113 And he said again unto his apostles, Whosoever heareth you heareth me; and whosoever heareth me heareth him that sent me: and whosoever wrongeth [32] you wrongeth me; and whosoever wrongeth me wrongeth him that sent me.

[33] 1115 And those seventy returned with great joy, and said unto him, Our Lord, even [34] the devils also are subject unto us in thy name. 1116 He said unto them, I beheld [35] Satan fallen like lightning from heaven. 1118 Behold, I am giving you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and the whole race [119] of the enemy; and nothing shall [36] hurt you. 1120 Only ye must not rejoice that the devils are subject unto you; but be glad that your names are written in heaven.

[37] 1121 And in that hour Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, I acknowledge thee, my Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto children: yea, my Father; so [38] was thy will. 1122 And he turned to his disciples, and said unto them, Everything hath been delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son, and to whomsoever the Son willeth [39] to reveal him. 1124 Come unto me, all of you, ye that are wearied and bearers of burdens, [40] and I will give you rest. 1125 Bear my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am gentle and lowly in my heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 1127 For my yoke is pleasant, and my burden is light.

1107 Lit. powers.  
1108 Matt. xi. 21.  
1109 Matt. xi. 22.  
1110 Matt. xi. 23.  
1111 The word as printed by Ciasca perhaps means gifts, but by dropping a point from the second letter we get the post-classical word given in the text above.  
1112 Matt. xi. 24.  
1113 Luke x. 16.  
1114 See below, § 20, 28, note.  
1115 Luke x. 17.  
1116 Luke x. 18.  
1117 The word translated devil in preceding verse.  
1118 Luke x. 19.  
1119 This is an Arabic clerical error for forces. The Syriac word for power means also military forces, which was apparently rendered in Arabic army, a word that differs from race only in diacritical points.  
1120 Luke x. 20.  
1121 Luke x. 21.  
1122 Luke x. 22.  
1123 cf. Pesh. and A.V. margin.  
1124 Matt. xi. 28.  
1125 Matt. xi. 29.  
1126 Lit. that (cf. above, § 1, 50, note).  
1127 Matt. xi. 30.
And while great multitudes were going with him, he turned, and said unto them, [43]
Whosoever cometh unto me, and hateth not his father, and his mother, and his brethren, and his
sisters, and his wife, and his children, and himself also, cannot [44] be a disciple to me. [1131]And whosoever doth not take his cross, and follow [45] me, cannot be a disciple to me.

Which of you desireth to build a tower, and doth not sit down first and reckon his expenses and
whether he hath enough to complete it? [46] lest when he hath laid the foundations, and is not able to finish, all that [47] behold him laugh at him, and say, [1136] This man began to build, and was not able to [48] finish. [1137] Or what king goeth to the battle to fight with another king, [1138] and doth not consider first whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh to him [49] with twenty thousand? [1139] And if he is not able, he sendeth unto him while he is afar [50] off, and seeketh peace. [1140] So shall every man of you consider, that desireth to be a disciple to me; for if he renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be a disciple to me.

Section XVI.

Then answered certain of the scribes and Pharisees, that they might tempt him, [2] and said, Teacher, we desire to see a sign from thee. [1143] He answered and said, This evil and adulterous generation seeketh a sign; and it shall not be given a sign, [3] except the sign of Jonah the prophet. [1145] And as Jonah was a sign to the inhabitants [4] of Nineveh, so shall the Son of man also be to this generation. [1146] And as Jonah was in the belly of the great fish three days and three nights, so shall the Son of man [5] be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. [1147] The queen of the south shall rise in the judgement with the people of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth that she might hear the wisdom of Solomon; [6] [Arabic, p.
62] and behold, here is a better than Solomon. 1149 The men of Nineveh shall stand in the judgement with this generation, and condemn it: for they repented at [7] the preaching of Jonah; and behold, here is a greater than Jonah. 1150 The unclean spirit, when he goeth out of the man, departeth, and goeth about through places wherein are no waters, that he may find rest for himself; and when he findeth it not, he [8] saith, I will return to my house whence I came out. 1151 And if he come and find it [9] adorned and set in order, 1152 then he goeth, and associateth with himself seven other spirits worse than himself; and they enter and dwell in it: and the end of that man [10] shall be worse than his beginning. 1153 Thus shall it be unto this evil generation.

[11] 1154 And while he was saying that, a woman from the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts that nursed [12] thee. 1155 But he said unto her, Blessed is he that heareth the word of God, and keepeth it.

[13] 1156 And while he was speaking unto the multitude, there came unto him his mother [14] and his brethren, and sought to speak with him; 1157 and they were not able, because of [15] the multitude; and they stood without and sent, calling him unto them. 1158 A man said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren are standing without, and seek to [16] speak with thee. 1159 But he answered unto him that spake unto him, Who is my [17] mother? and who are my brethren? 1160 And he beckoned with his hand, stretching it out towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother! and behold, my brethren! [18] 1161 And every man that shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven is my brother, and my sister, and my mother.

[19] 1162 And after that, Jesus was going about in the cities and in the villages, and proclaiming [Arabic, p. 63] and preaching the kingdom of God, and his 1163 twelve with him, [20] 1164 and the women which had been healed of diseases and of evil spirits, Mary [21] that was called Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven devils, 1165 and Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod’s steward, and Susanna, and many others, who were ministering to them of their substance.

[22] 1166 And after that, Jesus went out of the house, and sat on the sea shore. 1167 And there [23] gathered unto him great multitudes. And when the press of the people was great upon him, he went

1149 Matt. xii. 41.
1151 Luke xi. 25.
1153 Matt. xii. 45b.
1154 Luke xi. 27.
1155 Luke xi. 28.
1156 Matt. xii. 46a; Luke viii. 19a.
1157 Matt. xii. 46c; Luke viii. 19b.
1158 Mark iii. 31; Matt. xii. 47.
1159 Matt. xii. 48.
1160 Matt. xxii. 49.
1161 Matt. xiii. 50.
1163 The Arabic printed text gives no sense. A simple change in the diacritical points of one letter gives the reading of the Syriac versions, which is adopted here.
1165 Luke viii. 3.
1166 Matt. xiii. 1.
1167 Matt. xiii. 2.

87
up and sat in the boat; and all the multitude was standing on the [24] shore of the sea. 1166 And he spake to them much in parables, and said, The sower [25] went forth to sow: and when he sowed, 1169 some fell on the beaten highway; and it was [26] trodden upon, and the birds ate it. 1170 And other fell on the rocks: and some, where there was not much earth; and straightway it sprang up, because it had no depth in [27] the earth: 1171 and when the sun rose, it withered; and because it had no root, it dried [28] up. 1172 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it; [29] and it yielded no fruit. 1173 And other fell into excellent and good1174 ground; and it came up, and grew, and brought forth fruit, some thirty, and some sixty, and some [30] a hundred. 1175 And when he said that, he cried, He that hath ears that hear, let him [31] hear. 1176 And when they were alone, his disciples came, and asked him, and said unto [32] him, What is this parable? and why spakest thou unto them in parables? 1177 He [Arabic, p. 64] answered and said unto them, Unto you is given the knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom of God; but it is not given unto them that are [33] without. 1178 He that hath shall be given unto, and there shall be added; and he that [34] hath not, that which he hath shall be taken from him also. 1179 For this cause therefore I speak unto them in parables; because they see, and see not; and hear, and hear [35] not, nor understand. 1180 And in them is being fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, who said,

Hearing they shall hear, and shall not understand; And seeing they shall see, and shall not perceive:

[36] 1187 The heart of this people is waxed gross, And their hearing with their ears is become heavy, And they have closed their eyes; Lest they should see with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their hearts, And should return,
And I should heal them.

[37, 38] 1182 But ye, blessed are your eyes, which see; and your ears, which hear. 1183 Blessed [39] are the eyes which see what ye see. 1184 Verily I say unto you, Many of the prophets and the righteous longed to see what ye see, and saw not; and to hear what ye [40] hear, and heard not.

---

1166 Matt. xiii. 3.
1169 Matt. xiii. 4a; Luke viii. 5b.
1170 Matt. xiii. 5.
1171 Matt. xiii. 6.
1172 Luke viii. 7; Mark iv. 7b.
1173 Luke viii. 8a; Mark iv. 8b.
1174 cf. Peshitta (against Cur. and Sin.).
1175 Luke viii. 8c.
1177 Mark iv. 11; Matt. xiii. 11.
1178 Matt. xiii. 12.
1179 Matt. xiii. 13.
1181 Matt. xiii. 15.
1182 Matt. xiii. 16.
1183 Luke x. 23b.
1184 Matt. xiii. 17.
When ye know not this parable, how shall ye know all parables? [41, 42]  

Hear ye the parable of the sower. [43] The sower which sowed, sowed the word of God. [44] Every one who heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, the evil one cometh and snatcheth away the word that hath been sown in his heart: and this is that which was sown on the middle of the highway. [45, 46] [Arabic, p. 65] But that which was sown on the rocks is he that heareth the word, and straightway receiveth it with joy; [47] only, it hath no root in his soul, but his belief in it is for a time; and whenever there is distress or persecution because of a word, he stumbleth quickly. And that which was sown among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the error of riches, and the rest of the other lusts enter, and choke the word, and it becometh without fruit. And that which was sown in good ground is he that heareth the word in a pure and good heart, and understandeth it, and holdeth to it, and bringeth forth fruit with patience, and produceth either a hundredfold or sixtyfold or thirty.  

And he said, So is the kingdom of God, like a man who casteth seed into the earth, and sleepeth and riseth by night and day, and the seed groweth and cometh up, whence he knoweth not. And the earth bringeth it to the fruit; and first it will be blade, and after it ear, and at last perfect wheat in the ear: and whenever the fruit ripeneth, he bringeth immediately the sickle, for the harvest hath come.

Section XVII.

[1] And he set forth to them another parable, and said, The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; but when men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went away. And when the blade sprang up and brought forth fruit,
there were noticed the tares also. 1207 And the servants of the master of the house came, and said unto him, Our lord, didst thou not sow good [5] [Arabic, p. 66] seed in thy field? whence are there tares in it? 1208 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. His servants said unto him, Wilt thou that we go [6] and separate it? 1209 He said unto them, Perhaps, 1210 when ye separate the tares, ye would [7] root up with them wheat also. 1211 Leave them to grow both together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say unto the reapers, Separate the tares first, and bind them in bundles to be burned with fire; and gather the wheat into my barns.

[8, 9] 1212 And he set forth to them another parable, and said, 1213 To what is the kingdom of [10] God like? and to what shall I liken it? and in what parable shall I set it forth? 1214 It [11] is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and planted in his field: 1215 and of the number of the things that are sown in the earth it is smaller than all of the things [12] which are sown, which are upon the earth; 1216 but when it is grown, it is greater than all the herbs, and produceth large branches, so that the birds of heaven make their nests in its branches.

[13, 14] 1217 And he set forth to them another parable: 1218 To what shall I liken the kingdom of [15] God? 1219 It is like the leaven which a woman took, and kneaded into three measures of flour, until the whole of it was leavened.

[16] 1220 And Jesus spake all that to the multitudes by way of parables, according as they [17] were able to hear. 1221 And without parables spake he not unto them; that the saying of the Lord through the prophet might be fulfilled:

I will open my mouth in parables;
And I will utter secrets which were before the foundations 1222 of the world.

[18] 1223 But he explained to his disciples privately everything.

[19] 1224 Then Jesus left 1225 the multitudes, and came to the house. And his disciples came unto him, and said unto him, Explain unto us that parable about the tares [20] [Arabic, p. 67] and the

---

1207 Matt. xiii. 27.
1208 Matt. xiii. 28.
1209 Matt. xiii. 29.
1210 See above, § 4, 24, note.
1211 Matt. xiii. 30.
1212 Matt. xiii. 31a.
1213 Luke xiii. 18b.
1214 Mark iv. 30b; Luke xiii. 19a.
1215 Matt. xiii. 31c; Mark iv. 31b.
1216 Matt. xiii. 32b; Mark iv. 32b.
1217 Mark iv. 33; or rather Matt. xiii. 33a.
1218 Luke xiii. 20b.
1219 Matt. xiii. 33b.
1220 Matt. xiii. 34a; Mark iv. 33b.
1221 Matt. xiii. 34b; Matt. xiii. 35.
1222 The word (if not a corruption of that used in the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, and in § 43, 46 where, however, according to Ciasca’s foot-note, it was not the word first written by the scribe) is Syriac. Perhaps it means the ends of the earth (see P. Smith, Thes. Syr.). Still a third word is used in § 47, 42.
1223 Mark iv. 34b.
1224 Matt. xiii. 36.
1225 cf. § 11, 32, note.
field. 1226He answered and said unto them, He that sowed good seed is [21] the Son of man; 1227and the field is the world; and the good seed are the children of the [22] kingdom; 1228and the tares are the children of the evil one; and the enemy that sowed them1229 is Satan; and the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. [23] 1228And as the tares are separated and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of [24] this world. 1231The Son of man shall send his angels, and separate from his kingdom [25] all things that injure, 1232and all the doers of iniquity, and they shall cast them into the [26] furnace of fire: and there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 1235Then the righteous shall shine as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Whosoever hath ears that hear, let him hear.

[27] 1234And again the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hid in a field: that which a man found and hid; and, for his pleasure in it, went and sold all that he had, and bought that field.

[28] 1235And again the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the old and the new. of the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the old and the new. of the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the old and the new. of the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the old and the new.

[29] pearls; 1236and when he found one pearl of great price, he went and sold everything that he had, and bought it.

[30] 1237And again the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was cast into the sea, and [31] gathered of every kind: 1238and when it was filled, they drew it up on to the shore of the sea, and sat down to select; and the good of them they threw into the vessels, [32] and the bad they threw outside. 1239Thus shall it be in the end of the world: the angels [33] shall go forth, 1240and separate the wicked from among the good, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

[34] 1241Jesus said unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They said unto [35] [Arabic, p. 68] him, Yea, our Lord. 1243He said unto them, Therefore every scribe that becometh a disciple of the kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, who bringeth out of his treasures the new and the old.

[36, 37] 1245And when Jesus had finished all these parables, he removed thence, and came to his city; 1245and he taught them in their synagogues, so that they were perplexed. [38] 1246And when the sabbath came, Jesus began to teach in the synagogue; and many of [39] those that heard

---

1226 Matt. xiii. 37.
1227 Matt. xiii. 38.
1228 Matt. xiii. 39.
1229 Singular.
1230 Matt. xiii. 40.
1231 Matt. xiii. 41.
1232 Matt. xiii. 42.
1233 Matt. xiii. 43.
1234 Matt. xiii. 44.
1235 Matt. xiii. 45.
1236 Matt. xiii. 46.
1237 Matt. xiii. 47.
1238 cf. note to § 10, 8.
1239 Matt. xiii. 48.
1240 Matt. xiii. 49.
1241 Matt. xiii. 50.
1242 Matt. xiii. 51.
1243 Matt. xiii. 52.
1244 Matt. xiii. 53.
1245 Matt. xiii. 54.
1246 Mark vi. 2.
marvelled, and said, Whence came these things to this man? And many envied him and gave no heed to him, but said, What is this wisdom that is given to this man, that there should happen at his hands such as these mighty works? 1247 Is not this a carpenter, son of a carpenter? and is not his mother called Mary? and [41] his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? 1248 And his sisters, all of them, [42] lo, are they not all with us? 1250 Whence hath this man all these things? And they were in doubt concerning him. 1251 And Jesus knew their opinion, and said unto them, Will ye haply say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal first thyself: and all that [43] we have heard that thou didst in Capernaum, do here also in thine own city? 1253 And he said, Verily I say unto you, A prophet is not received in his own city, nor among [44] his brethren: 1254 for a prophet is not despised, save in his own city, and among his own kin, and in his own house. 1255 Verily I say unto you, In the days of Elijah the prophet, there were many widows among the children of Israel, when the heaven held back three years and six months, 1256 and there was a great famine in all the land; and Elijah [Arabic, p. 69] was not sent to one of them, save to Zarephath of Sidon, to a woman that was [47] a widow. 1257 And many lepers were among the children of Israel in the days of Elisha the prophet; but not one of them was cleansed, save Naaman the Nabathæan. 1258 And he was not able to do there many mighty works, 1259 because of their unbelief; 1260 except that he laid his hand upon a few of the sick, and healed them. 1261 And when those who were in the synagogue heard, 1262 they were all filled with wrath; and they rose up, 1263 and brought him forth outside the city, and brought him to the brow of the hill upon which their city was built, that [52] they might cast him from its summit: 1264 but he passed through among them and went away. 1265 And he went about in the villages which were around Nazareth, and taught in their synagogues.

Section XVIII.
[1] At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, and all the things which came to pass at his hand; \(^{1266}\) and he marvelled, for he had obtained excellent \(^{2}\) information concerning him. \(^{1268}\) \(^{1269}\) And some men said that John the Baptist was risen \(^{3}\) from among the dead; \(^{1270}\) and others said that Elijah had appeared; and others, Jeremiah; \(^{4}\) and others, that a prophet of the old prophets was risen; \(^{1272}\) and others said that he \(^{5}\) was a prophet like one of the prophets. \(^{1273}\) Herod said to his servants, This is John the Baptist, he whom I beheaded; he is risen from among the dead: therefore mighty \(^{6}\) \[Arabic, p. 70\] works result from him. \(^{1274}\) For Herod himself had sent and taken John, and cast him into prison, for the sake of Herodias his brother Philip's wife, whom he \(7\) had taken. \(^{1275}\) And John said to Herod, Thou hast no authority to take the wife of thy \(8\) brother. \(^{1276}\) And Herodias avoided him and wished to kill him; and she could not. \(^{9}\) \(^{1277}\) But Herod feared John, for he knew that he was a righteous man and a holy; and \(10\) he guarded him, and heard him much, and did, and obeyed him with gladness. \(^{1278}\) And he wished to kill him; but he feared the people, for they adhered to him as the \(11\) prophet. \(^{1279}\) And there was a celebrated day, and Herod had made a feast for his great men on the day of his anniversary, \(^{1280}\) and for the officers and for the chief men \(12\) of Galilee. \(^{1281}\) And the daughter of Herodias came in and danced in the midst of the company, and pleased Herod and those that sat with him. And the king said to the \(13\) damsel, Ask of me what thou wilt, and I will give it thee. \(^{1282}\) \(^{1282}\) And he swore unto her, \(14\) Whatsoever thou shalt ask, I will give it thee, to the half of my kingdom. \(^{1283}\) And she went out, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask him? \(^{1284}\) She said unto her, The \(15\) head of John the Baptist. \(^{1285}\) And immediately she came in hastily to the king, and said unto him, I desire in this hour that thou give me on a dish the head of John \(16\) the Baptist. \(^{1286}\) \(^{1286}\) And the king was exceeding sorry; but because of the oath and the \(17\) guests he did not wish to refuse her. \(^{1287}\) \(^{1287}\) But immediately the king sent an

---

1267. Mark vi. 14b.
1268. There can be little doubt that this is the meaning of the Arabic. There is nothing like it in the Peshitta; the Curetonian is of course lacking; but the phrase in the Sinaitic is very similar.
1269. Luke ix. 8a; Matt. xvi. 14b.
1270. Here begins verse 8a in Greek.
1271. Luke ix. 8b; Mark vi. 15b.
1272. Mark vi. 16; Matt. xiv. 2b.
1273. Mark vi. 17.
1274. Mark vi. 18.
1275. Mark vi. 19.
1276. Mark vi. 20.
1277. Matt. xiv. 5.
1278. Mark vi. 21.
1279. Perhaps appointment (cf. Moesinger, p. 165; but Isho'dad [Harris, Fragments, p. 65] and the Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary have the ordinary reading).
1280. Mark vi. 22.
1281. Mark vi. 23.
1283. Or simply ask.
1284. Mark vi. 25.
1286. Mark vi. 27.
executioner, and commanded that he should bring the head of John: and he went and cut off [18]
the head of John in the prison, [128] and brought it on a dish, and delivered it to the [19] damsel; and
the damsel gave it to her mother. [129] And his disciples heard, and came [Arabic, p. 71] and took
this cause Herod said, I beheaded John: who [21] is this, of whom I hear these things. And he
desired to see him. [1293] And Jesus, when he heard, removed thence in a boat to a waste place alone,
to the other side of the sea of the Galilee of Tiberias. [1294]

[22] [1295] And many saw them going, and knew them, and hastened by land [1296] from all the cities,
came thither beforehand; [1297] for they saw the signs which he was doing on the [23, 24] sick.
[1298] And Jesus went up into the mountain, and sat there with his disciples. [1299] And [25] the feast of
the passover of the Jews was near. [1300] And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and saw great multitudes coming
to him. [1301] And he was moved with compassion for them, for [26] they were like sheep that were
without a shepherd. [1302] And he received them, and spake to them concerning the kingdom of God,
and healed those who had need of healing.

[27] [1303] And when the evening approached, [1304] his disciples came to him, and said unto [28]
him, [1305] The place is desert, and the time is past; send away the multitudes of the people, [1306] that
they may go to the towns and villages which are around us, and buy for [29] themselves bread; for
they have nothing to eat. [1307] But he said unto them, They have [30] no need to go away; give ye
them what may be eaten. [1308] They said unto him, We have not here enough. [1309] He said unto Philip,
Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? [31, 32] [1310] And he said that proving him; and he
knew what he was resolved to do. [1311] Philip said [Arabic, p. 72] unto him, Two hundred pennyworth

---

1288 Mark vi. 28.
1289 Mark vi. 29.
1290 Matt. xiv. 12b.
1291 Or, to tell.
1293 Matt. xiv. 13a; John vi. 1b.
1294 A misunderstanding or slavish reproduction of the Syriac. The Brit. Mus. text of Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary has of

Galilee, Tiberias.
1295 Mark vi. 33a.
1296 cf. Syriac versions and margin of R.V.
1297 John vi. 2b.
1298 John vi. 3.
1299 John vi. 4.
1300 John vi. 5a.
1301 Mark vi. 34b.
1303 Matt. xiv. 15a.
1304 Or, came.
1305 Mark vi. 36.
1306 cf. the addition in the Sinaitic Syriac.
1307 Matt. xiv. 16.
1308 Matt. xiv. 17a.
1309 John vi. 5b.
1310 John vi. 6.
1311 John vi. 7.
of bread would not suffice them after\textsuperscript{1312} every one of them hath taken a small amount. \textsuperscript{1313}One of his disciples said unto [34] him (namely, Andrew the brother of Simon Cephas), \textsuperscript{1314} Here is a lad having five loaves \textsuperscript{[35]} of barley and two fishes: but this amount, what is it for all these? \textsuperscript{1315}But wilt thou that we go and buy for all the people what may be eaten? for we have no more [36] than these five loaves and the two fishes. \textsuperscript{1316}And the grass was plentiful in that place. Jesus said unto them, Arrange all the people that they may sit down on the grass, \textsuperscript{37} fifty people in a company. \textsuperscript{1317}And the disciples did so. And all the people sat down \textsuperscript{[38]} by companies, by hundreds and fifties. \textsuperscript{1318}Then Jesus said unto them, Bring hither [39] those five loaves and the two fishes. \textsuperscript{1319}And when they brought him that, Jesus took the bread and the fish, and looked to heaven, and blessed, and divided, and gave to \textsuperscript{[40]} his disciples to set before them; \textsuperscript{1320}and the disciples set for the multitudes the bread \textsuperscript{[41]} and the fish; and they ate, all of them, and were satisfied. \textsuperscript{1321}And when they were satisfied, he said unto his disciples, Gather the fragments that remain over, that nothing \textsuperscript{[42]} be lost. \textsuperscript{1322}And they gathered, and filled twelve baskets with fragments, being those that remained over from those which ate of the five barley loaves and the two \textsuperscript{[43]} fishes. \textsuperscript{1323}And those people who ate were five thousand, besides the women and children. \textsuperscript{[44]} [Arabic, p. 73] \textsuperscript{1324}And straightway he pressed his disciples to go up into the ship, and that they should go before him unto the other side to Bethsaida, while he \textsuperscript{[45]} himself should send away the multitudes. \textsuperscript{1325}And those people who saw the sign which \textsuperscript{[46]} Jesus did, said, Of a truth this is a prophet who hath come into the world. \textsuperscript{1326}And Jesus knew their purpose to come and take him, and make him a king; and he left them, and went up into the mountain alone for prayer. 

\textsuperscript{1327}And when the nightfall was near, his disciples went down unto the sea, and sat\textsuperscript{1328} in a boat, and came to the side of Capernaum. \textsuperscript{1329}And the darkness came on, and Jesus [49] had not come to them. \textsuperscript{1330}And the sea was stirred up against them by reason of a violent \textsuperscript{[50]} wind that blew. \textsuperscript{1331}And the boat was distant from the land many furlongs, and they were much damaged by the waves, and the wind was against them.

\textsuperscript{1312}Probably a mistaken rendering of the ordinary Syriac reading.
\textsuperscript{1313}John vi. 8.
\textsuperscript{1314}John vi. 9.
\textsuperscript{1315}Luke ix. 13b; considerably changed.
\textsuperscript{1316}John vi. 10b; and Luke ix. 14b, 15a.
\textsuperscript{1317}Mark vi. 40.
\textsuperscript{1318}Matt. xiv. 18.
\textsuperscript{1319}Mark vi. 41a.
\textsuperscript{1320}Matt. xiv. 19b.
\textsuperscript{1321}Matt. xiv. 20a; John vi. 12.
\textsuperscript{1322}John vi. 13.
\textsuperscript{1323}Matt. xiv. 21.
\textsuperscript{1324}Mark vi. 45.
\textsuperscript{1325}John vi. 14.
\textsuperscript{1326}John vi. 15.
\textsuperscript{1327}John vi. 16.
\textsuperscript{1328}cf. Syriac versions.
\textsuperscript{1329}John vi. 17.
\textsuperscript{1330}John vi. 18.
\textsuperscript{1331}Matt. xiv. 24.
Section XIX.

[1] \[1332\] And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus came unto them, walking upon the [2] \[1333\] water, after they had rowed \[1334\] with difficulty about twenty-five or thirty furlongs. [3] \[1335\] And when he drew near unto their boat, his disciples saw him walking on the water; and they were troubled, and supposed that it was a false appearance; and they cried [4] out from their fear. \[1336\] But Jesus straightway spoke unto them, and said, Take courage, [5] for it is I; fear not. \[1337\] Then Cephas answered and said unto him, My Lord, if it be thou, [6] bid me to come unto thee on the water. \[1338\] And Jesus said unto him, Come. And [7] Cephas went down out of the boat, and walked on the water to come unto Jesus. \[1339\] But [Arabic, p. 74] when he saw the wind strong, he feared, and was on the point of sinking; [8] and he lifted up his voice, and said, My Lord, save me. \[1340\] And immediately our Lord stretched out his hand and took \textit{hold of} him, and said unto him, [9] Thou of little faith, why didst thou doubt? \[1341\] And when Jesus came near, he went up [10] unto them into the boat, he and Simon, and immediately the wind ceased. \[1342\] And those that were in the ship came and worshipped him, and said, Truly thou art the [11] Son of God. \[1343\] And straightway that ship arrived at the land which they made for. [12] \[1344\] And when they came out of the ship to the land, they marvelled greatly and were [13] perplexed in themselves: \[1345\] and they had not understood by means of \[1346\] that bread, because their heart was gross.

[14] \[1347\] And when the people of that region knew of the arrival of Jesus, they made haste in all that land, and began to bring those that were diseased, \[1348\] born in their [15] beds to the place where they heard that he was. \[1349\] And wheresoever the place \textit{might be} which he entered, of the villages or the cities, they laid the sick in the markets, and sought of him that they might touch \[1350\] were it only the edge of his garment: and all that touched \[1351\] him were healed and lived. \[1352\]

\begin{itemize}
  \item [1332] Matt. xiv. 25.
  \item [1333] John vi. 19a, c.
  \item [1334] Lit. \textit{travelled}.
  \item [1336] Matt. xiv. 27.
  \item [1337] Matt. xiv. 28.
  \item [1338] Matt. xiv. 29.
  \item [1339] Matt. xiv. 30.
  \item [1340] Matt. xiv. 31.
  \item [1341] Matt. xiv. 32.
  \item [1342] Matt. xiv. 33.
  \item [1343] John vi. 21b.
  \item [1344] Mark vi. 54a; Mark vi. 51b.
  \item [1345] Mark vi. 52.
  \item [1346] Lit. \textit{from}.
  \item [1347] Mark vi. 54; Mark vi. 55.
  \item [1348] Strictly used of severe chronic disease.
  \item [1349] Mark vi. 56.
  \item [1349] \textit{cf.} § 12, 13, and note to § 8, 17.
  \item [1351] The word used at § 12, 35.
  \item [1351] Or, \textit{revived}, \textit{i.e.}, \textit{made to live}.
\end{itemize}
[16] 1353 And on the day after that, the multitude which was standing on the shore of the sea saw that there was there no other ship save that unto which the disciples had [17] gone up, 1354 and that Jesus went not up into the ship with his disciples (but there were other ships from Tiberias near the place where they ate the bread when Jesus blessed [18] it): 1356 and when that multitude saw that Jesus was not there, nor yet his disciples, they [19] [Arabic, p. 75] went up into those ships, and came to Capernaum, and sought Jesus. 1357 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Our [20] Master, when camest thou hither? 1358 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye have not sought me because of your seeing the signs, but because of [21] your eating the bread and being satisfied. 1360 Serve not the food which perisheth, but the food which abideth in eternal life, 1361 which the Son of man will give unto you: him 1362 [22] hath God the Father sealed. 1365 They said unto him, What shall we do that we may [23] work the work of God? 1364 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of [24] God, that ye believe in him whom he hath sent. 1365 They said unto him, What sign hast thou done, that we may see, and believe in thee? what hast thou wrought? [25] 1366 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it was written, Bread from heaven [26] gave he them to eat. 1367 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not bread from [27] heaven; but my Father gave you the bread of truth 1368 from heaven. 1370 The bread of God is that which came down from heaven and gave the [28, 29] world life. 1371 They said unto him, Our Lord, give us at all times this bread. 1372 Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: whosoever cometh unto me shall not hunger. [30] and whosoever believeth in me shall not thirst for ever. 1373 But I said unto you, [31] Ye have seen me, and have not believed. 1374 And all that my Father hath given to me cometh unto me; and whosoever cometh unto me I shall not cast him forth without. [32] 1375 I came down from heaven, not to do my own will, but to do the will of him [33] that sent me; 1376 and this is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing of [34] [Arabic, p. 76] that which he gave me, but raise it up in
the last day. 1377This is the will of my Father, that every one that seeth the Son, and believeth in him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up in the last day.

[35] 1378The Jews therefore murmured against him because of his saying, I am the bread [36] which came down from heaven. 1379And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? then how saith this man, I came down from [37, 38] heaven? 1380Jesus answered and said unto them, Murmur not one with another. 1381No man is able to come unto me, except the Father which sent me draw him; and I will [39] raise him up in the last day. 1382It is written in the prophet, They shall all be the taught of God. Every one who heareth from the Father now, 1383 and learneth of him, cometh [40] unto me. 1384No man now seeth the Father; but he that is from God, he it is that seeth [41] the Father. 1385Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever believeth in me hath eternal [42, 43] life. 1386I am the bread of life. 1387Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and [44] they died. 1388This is the bread which came down from heaven, that a man may eat [45] of it, and not die. 1389I am the bread of life which came down from heaven: and if a man eat of this bread he shall live for ever. 1390and the bread which I shall give is my body, which I give for the life of the world.

[46] 1391The Jews therefore quarrelled one with another, and said, How can he give us [47] [Arabic, p. 77] his body that we may eat it? 1392Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye do not eat the body of the Son of man and drink his blood, ye shall [48] not have life in yourselves. 1393Whosoever eateth of my body and drinketh of my blood [49] hath eternal life; and I will raise him up in the last day. 1394My body truly is meat, 1395 and [50] my blood truly is drink. 1396 Whosoever eateth my body and drinketh my blood abideth [51] in me, and I in him— 1398 as the living Father sent me, and I am alive because of the [52] Father; and whosoever eateth me, he also shall live because of me. 1399This is the bread which came down from heaven: and not according as your fathers ate the [53] manna, and died; whosoever eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

---

1377 John vi. 40.
1378 John vi. 41.
1379 John vi. 42.
1380 John vi. 43.
1381 John vi. 44.
1382 John vi. 45.
1383 i.e., therefore (see note, § 9, 21).
1384 John vi. 46.
1385 John vi. 47.
1386 John vi. 48.
1387 John vi. 49.
1388 John vi. 50.
1389 John vi. 51.
1390 John vi. 51b; in Ciasca's text John vi. 51b–71 are cited as vi. 52–72. (See Introduction, 20, note.)
1391 John vi. 52.
1392 John vi. 53.
1393 John vi. 54.
1394 John vi. 55.
1395 Or, eaten.
1396 Or, drunk.
1397 John vi. 56.
1398 John vi. 57.
1399 John vi. 58.
This he said in [54] the synagogue, when he was teaching in Capernaum. And many of his disciples, when they heard, said, This word is hard; who is he that can hear it?

Section XX.

[1] And Jesus knew within himself that his disciples were murmuring because of [2] that, and he said unto them, Doth this trouble you? And if ye should see the Son [3] of man then ascend to the place where he was of old? It is the spirit that quickeneth, and the body profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you are spirit [4] and life. But there are some of you that do not believe. And Jesus knew beforehand who they were who should not believe, and who it was that should betray [5] him. And he said unto them, Therefore I said unto you, No man can come unto me, if that hath not been given him by the Father.

[6] And because of this word many of his disciples turned back and walked not with him. And Jesus said unto the twelve, Do ye haply also wish to [8] go away? Simon Cephas answered and said, My Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we have believed and known that thou art the [10] Messiah, the Son of the living God. Jesus said unto them, Did not I choose you, [11] ye company of the twelve, and of you one is a devil? He said that because of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot; for he, being of the twelve, was purposed to betray him.

[12] And while he was speaking, one of the Pharisees came asking of him that he [13] would eat with him: and he went in, and reclined to meat. And that Pharisee, when [14] he saw it, marvelled that he had not first cleansed himself before his eating. Jesus said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees wash the outside of the cup and the dish, and ye think that ye are cleansed; but your inside is full of injustice and wickedness.
[15, 16] Ye of little mind, did not he that made the outside make the inside? Now give what ye have in alms, and everything shall be clean unto you. [17, 18] And there came to him Pharisees and scribes, come from Jerusalem. 

And when they saw some of his disciples eating bread while they had not washed their hands, [19] they found fault. For all of the Jews and the Pharisees, if they wash not their hands thoroughly, eat not; for they held to the ordinance of the elders. And they ate not what was bought from the market, except they washed it; and many other things did they keep of what they had received, such as the washing of cups, and [21] measures, and vessels of brass, and couches. 

And scribes and Pharisees asked him, [Arabic, p. 79] Why do thy disciples not walk according to the ordinances of the elders, but [22] eat bread without washing their hands? Jesus answered and said unto them, Why do ye also overstep the command of God by reason of your ordinance? [23] God said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whosoever revileth his father and [24] his mother shall surely die. But ye say, If a man say to his father or to his mother, What thou receivest of me is an offering,—

1429 And ye suffer him not to do anything for his father or his mother; and ye make void and reject the word of God by reason of the ordinance that ye have ordained and commanded, such as the washing [27] of cups and measures, and what resembles that ye do much. 

1431 And ye forsook [28] the command of God, and held to the ordinance of men. Do ye well to wrong [29] the command of God in order that ye may establish your ordinance? Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah the prophet prophesy concerning you, and say, [30] This people honoureth me with its lips; but their heart is very far from me. [31] But in vain do they fear me,

---

1421 Luke xi. 41.
1422 cf. Peshitta.
1423 Mark vii. 1.
1424 Mark vii. 2.
1425 Mark vii. 3.
1426 i.e., were holding.
1427 Or, custom, tradition; and so wherever the word occurs.
1428 Mark vii. 4.
1429 Mark vii. 5.
1430 Sic.
1431 Matt. xv. 3.
1432 Matt. xv. 4a; Mark vii. 10b.
1433 Mark vii. 11.
1434 The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they, resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.
1435 Mark vii. 12.
1436 The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they, resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.
1437 Mark vii. 13.
1438 The printed Arabic text has he receiveth and they, resulting from a misplacement of diacritical points by an Arabic copyist.
1439 Mark vii. 8.
1440 Mark vii. 9.
1441 Here begins verse 9 in Greek.
1442 The Syriac word for injure also means reject, deny.
1443 Matt. xv. 7.
1444 Matt. xv. 8.
1445 Sic.
1446 Matt. xv. 9.
In that they teach the commands of men.

[32] "And Jesus called all the multitude, and said unto them, Hear me, all of you, and [33] understand: [44] nothing without the man, which then enters him, is able to defile him: [34] but what goeth out of him, that it is which defileth the man. [49] He that hath ears [35] that hear, let him hear. [40] Then his disciples drew near, and said unto him, Knowest [36] thou that the Pharisees which heard this word were angry? [41] He answered and said unto them, Every plant which my Father which is in heaven planted not shall be [37] [Arabic, p. 80] uprooted. [42] Let them alone; for they are blind leading blind. And if the blind lead [43] the blind, both of them shall fall into a hollow.

[38] "And when Jesus entered the house from the multitude, Simon Cephas asked him, [39] and said unto him, My Lord, explain to us that parable. [44] He said unto them, Do ye also thus not understand? Know ye not that everything that entereth into the [40] man from without cannot defile him; [45] because it entereth not into his heart; it entereth into his stomach only, and thence is cast forth in the cleansing which maketh [41] clean all the food? [46] The thing which goeth forth from the mouth of the man proceedeth [42] from his heart, and it is that which defileth the man. [47] From within the [43] heart of men proceed evil thoughts, fornication, adultery, theft, false witness, murder, injustice, wickedness, deceit, stupidity, evil eye, calumny, pride, foolishness: [48] these evils all of them from within proceed from the heart, and they are the things which defile the man: [49] but if a man eat while he washeth not his hands, he is not defiled.

[46] "And Jesus went out thence, and came to the borders of Tyre and Sidon. And he entered into a certain house, and desired that no man should know it; [50] and [47] he could not be hid. [51] But straightway a Canaanitish woman, whose daughter had an [48] unclean spirit, heard of him. [52] And that woman was a Gentile of Emesa of Syria. [53] And she came out after him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy upon me, my Lord, thou [50] son of David; for my daughter is seized in an evil way by Satan. [54] And he answered [Arabic, p. 81] her not a word. And his disciples

\[1447\] Mark vii. 14.
\[1448\] Mark vii. 15.
\[1449\] Mark vii. 16.
\[1450\] Matt. xv. 12.
\[1451\] Matt. xv. 13.
\[1452\] Matt. xv. 14.
\[1453\] The Arabic word is here used with a Syriac meaning.
\[1454\] Matt. xv. 17a; Matt. xv. 15.
\[1455\] Mark vii. 18b.
\[1456\] Mark vii. 19.
\[1457\] This clause in the Peshitta is not very clear, and the Arabic version fails to get from it the meaning of the Greek.
\[1458\] Matt. xv. 18.
\[1459\] Mark vii. 21.
\[1460\] Or, From within, from.
\[1461\] Mark vii. 22.
\[1462\] Mark vii. 23.
\[1463\] Matt. xv. 20b.
\[1464\] Matt. xv. 21a; Mark vii. 24b.
\[1465\] Or, about him.
\[1466\] Mark vii. 25a.
\[1467\] Mark vii. 26a.
\[1468\] Matt. xv. 22b.
\[1469\] Or, the devil.
\[1470\] Matt. xv. 23.
came and besought him, and said, Send [51] her away: for she crieth after us. 1471 He answered and said unto them, I was [52] not sent except to the sheep that are gone astray of the house of Israel. 1472 But she came and worshipped him, and said, My Lord, help me, have mercy upon me.

[53] 1473 Jesus said unto her, It is not seemly that the children’s bread should be taken and [54] thrown to the dogs. 1474 But she said, Yea, my Lord: the dogs also eat of the crumbs [55] that fall from their masters’ tables, and live. 1475 Then said Jesus unto her, O woman, [56] great is thy faith: it shall be unto thee as thou hast desired. 1476 Go then thy way; and [57] because of this word, the devil is gone out of thy daughter. 1477 And her daughter was [58] healed in that hour. 1478 And that woman went away to her house, and found her daughter laid upon the bed, and the devil gone out of her.

Section XXI.

[1] 1479 And Jesus went out again from the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and came to the [2] sea of Galilee, towards the borders of Decapolis. 1480 And they brought unto him one dumb and deaf, and entreated him that he would lay his hand upon him and heal [3] him. 1481 And he drew him away from the multitude, and went away alone, and spat [4] upon his fingers, and thrust them into his ears, and touched his tongue; 1482 and looked [5] to heaven, and sighed, and said unto him, Be opened. 1483 And in that hour his ears [6] were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed, and he spake with ease. 1484 And Jesus charged them much that they should not tell this to any man: but the more [7] he charged them, the more they increased in publishing, and marvelled much, 1485 and [Arabic, p. 82] said, This man doeth everything well: he made the deaf to hear, and those that lacked speech to speak.

[8, 9] 1486 And while he was passing through the land of Samaria, 1487 he came to one of the cities of the Samaritans, called Sychar, beside the field which Jacob gave to Joseph to [10] his son. 1488 And there was there a spring of water of Jacob’s. And Jesus was fatigued from the exertion of the way,
and sat at the spring. And the time was about the [11] sixth hour. And a woman of Samaria came to draw water; and Jesus said unto [12] her, Give me water, that I may drink. And his disciples had entered into the city [13] to buy for themselves food. And that Samaritan woman said unto him, How dost thou, being a Jew, ask me to give thee to drink, while I am a Samaritan woman? [14] (And the Jews mingle not with the Samaritans.) Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who this is that said unto thee, Give me [15] to drink; thou wouldest ask him, and he would give thee the water of life. That woman said unto him, My Lord, thou hast no bucket, and the well is deep: from [16] whence hast thou the water of life? Can it be that thou art greater than our father Jacob, who gave us this well, and drank from it, and his children, and his sheep? [17] Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drinketh of this water shall thirst [18] again: but whosoever drinketh of the water which I shall give him shall not thirst for ever: but the water which I shall give him shall be in him a spring of water springing [19] up unto eternal life. That woman said unto him, My Lord, give me of this water, that [20] I may not thirst again, neither come and draw water from here. Jesus said unto her, [21] Go and call thy husband, and come hither. She said unto him, I have no [22] husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou didst well, I have no husband: five husbands hast thou had, and this man whom thou hast now is not thy husband; and [23] in this thou saidst truly. That woman said unto him, My Lord, I perceive thee to [24] be a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say that in Jerusalem [25] is the place in which worship must be. Jesus said unto her, Woman, believe me, an hour cometh, when neither in this mountain, nor yet in Jerusalem, shall ye worship [26] the Father. Ye worship that which ye know not: but we worship that which [27] we know: for salvation is of the Jews. But an hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth: and the Father also [28] seeketh such as these worshippers. For God is a Spirit: and they that worship him [29] must worship him in spirit and in truth. That woman said unto him, I know that [30] the Messiah cometh:
and when he is come, he will teach us everything. Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

And while he was speaking, his disciples came; and they wondered how he would speak with a woman; but not one of them said unto him, What seekest thou? or, What speakest thou with her? 1514 The woman left her waterpot, and went to the city, and said to the people, Come, and see a man who told me all that ever I did: perhaps then he is the Messiah. 1517 And people went out from the city, and came to him. 1518 And he said unto them, I have food to eat that ye know not. 1519 And the disciples said amongst themselves, Can any one have brought him aught to eat? 1520 Jesus said unto them, My food is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work. 1522 Said ye not that after four months cometh the harvest? behold, I therefore say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and behold the lands, that they have become white, and the harvest is already come. And he that reapeth receiveth his wages, and gathereth the fruit of eternal life; and the sower and the reaper rejoice together. 1526 For in this is found the word of truth, One soweth, and another reapeth. 1527 And I sent you to reap that in which ye have not laboured: others laboured, and ye have entered on their labour.

And from that city many of the Samaritans believed in him because of the words of that woman, who testified and said, He told me all that ever I did. 1530 And when those Samaritans came unto him, they besought him to abide with them; and he abode with them two days.

1511 John iv. 27.
1512 Or, was speaking.
1513 But see note to § 7, 38.
1514 John iv. 28.
1515 John iv. 29.
1516 John iv. 30.
1517 John iv. 31.
1518 John iv. 32.
1519 John iv. 33.
1520 The text is uncertain.
1521 John iv. 34.
1522 Or, come beforehand.
1523 John iv. 35.
1524 John iv. 36.
1525 So in the Arabic, contrary to the usual practice of this writer (cf. § 6, 19).
1526 John iv. 37.
1527 John iv. 38.
1528 John iv. 39.
1529 John iv. 40.
1530 John iv. 41.
1531 John iv. 42.
[47, 48] 1532 And after two days Jesus went out thence and departed to Galilee. 1533 And Jesus [49] testified that a prophet is not honoured in his own city. 1534 And when he came to Galilee, the Galilæans received him.

Section XXII.

[1] 1535 And when Jesus came to a certain village, there drew near to him a leper, and fell at his feet, and besought him, and said unto him, If thou wilt, thou art able to [2] cleanse me. 1536 And Jesus had mercy upon him, and stretched forth his hand, and [3] touched him, and said, I will cleanse [1537] thee. 1538 And immediately his leprosy departed [4] from him, and he was cleansed. 1539 And he sternly charged him, and sent him out, [5] [Arabic, p. 85] and said unto him, 1540 See that thou tell not any man: but go and shew thyself to the priests, and offer an offering for thy cleansing as Moses commanded [6] for their testimony. 1541 But he, when he went out, began to publish much, and spread abroad the news, so that Jesus could not enter into any of the cities openly, for the extent to which the report of him spread, but he remained without in a desert [7] place. 1542 And much people came unto him from one place and another, 1543 to hear [8] his word, and that they might be healed of their pains. 1544 And he used to withdraw from them into the desert, and pray.

[9] 1545 And after that, was the feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

[10] 1546 And there was in Jerusalem a place prepared for bathing, 1547 which was called in [11] Hebrew the House of Mercy, having five porches. 1548 And there were laid in them much people of the sick, and blind, and lame, and paralysed, waiting for the moving [12] of the water. 1549 And the angel from time to time went down into the place of bathing, 1550 and moved the water; and the first that went down after the moving [13] of the water, every pain that he had was healed. 1551 And a man was there who had a [14] disease for thirty-eight years. 1552 And Jesus saw this man laid, and

1532 John iv. 43.
1533 John iv. 44.
1534 John iv. 45a.
1536 Mark i. 41.
1537 Lit. to cleanse.
1538 Mark i. 42.
1539 Mark i. 43.
1540 Mark i. 44.
1541 Mark i. 45a.
1542 Luke v. 15.
1543 This phrase does not occur in the Syriac versions (Cur. wanting), but is obviously a Syriac construction.
1544 Luke v. 16.
1545 John v. 1.
1546 John v. 2.
1547 Or, baptism. The phrase almost exactly reproduces the Syriac versions.
1548 John v. 3.
1549 John v. 4.
1550 Or, baptism. The phrase almost exactly reproduces the Syriac versions.
1551 John v. 5.
1552 John v. 6.
knew\textsuperscript{1553} that he had [15] been thus a long time; and he said unto him, Wouldst thou be made whole? \textsuperscript{1554}That diseased one answered and said, Yea, my Lord, I have no man, when the water moveth, to put me into the bathing-place; but when I come, another goeth down before [16, 17] me. \textsuperscript{1555}Jesus said unto him, Rise, take thy bed, and walk. \textsuperscript{1556}And immediately that man was healed; and he rose, and carried his bed, and walked.

\textsuperscript{18}And that day was a sabbath. And when the Jews saw that healed one, they\textsuperscript{1558} said [19] unto him, It is a sabbath: thou hast no authority to carry thy bed. \textsuperscript{1559}And he answered and said unto them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take thy bed, [20] [Arabic, p. 86] and walk. \textsuperscript{1560}They asked him therefore, Who is this man that said unto thee, [21] Take thy bed, and walk? \textsuperscript{1561}But he that was healed knew not who it was; for Jesus had removed from that place to another, because of the press of the great multitude [22] which was in that place. \textsuperscript{1562}And after two days Jesus happened upon him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art whole: sin not again, lest there come upon [23] thee what is worse than the first. \textsuperscript{1563}And that man went, and said to the Jews that it [24] was Jesus that had healed him. \textsuperscript{1564}And because of that the Jews persecuted Jesus and [25] sought to kill him, because he was doing this on the sabbath. \textsuperscript{1565}And Jesus said unto [26] them, My Father worketh until now, and I also work. \textsuperscript{1566}And because of this especially the Jews sought to kill him, not because he profaned the sabbath only; but for his saying also that God was his Father, and his making himself equal with God. [27] \textsuperscript{1567}Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son cannot do anything of himself, but what he seeth the Father do; what the Father doeth, [28] that the Son also doeth like him. \textsuperscript{1568}The Father loveth his Son, and everything that he doeth he sheweth him: and more than these works will he shew him, that ye [29] may marvel. \textsuperscript{1569}And as the Father raiseth the dead and giveth them life, so the Son [30] also giveth life to whomsoever he will. \textsuperscript{1570}And the Father judgeth no man, but hath [31] given all judgement unto the Son; \textsuperscript{1571}that every man may honour the Son, as he honoureth the Father. And he that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which [32] sent him. \textsuperscript{1572}Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever heareth my word, and believeth in him that sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgement, but passeth from [33] [Arabic, p. 87] death unto life. \textsuperscript{1573}Verily, verily,
I say unto you, An hour shall come, and now is also, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and those [34] which hear shall live. \(^{1574}\) And as the Father hath life in himself, \(^{1575}\) likewise he gave to [35] the Son also that he might have life in himself; \(^{1576}\) \(^{1577}\) and authority to do judgement also, [36] because \(^{1578}\) he is the Son of man. \(^{1579}\) Marvel not then at that: I mean the coming of the hour when all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth: [37] \(^{1580}\) those that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and those that have done evil deeds, to the resurrection of judgement.

[38] \(^{1581}\) I am not able of myself to do anything; but as I hear, I judge: and my judgement [39] is just; I seek not my own will, but the will of him that sent me. \(^{1582}\) \(^{1583}\) I bear witness [40] of myself, and so \(^{1584}\) my witness is not true. \(^{1585}\) It is another that beareth witness [41] of me; and I know that the witness which he beareth of me is true. \(^{1586}\) Ye have sent [42] unto John, and he hath borne witness of the truth. \(^{1587}\) But not from man do I seek [43] witness; but I say that ye may live. \(^{1588}\) \(^{1589}\) That \(^{1590}\) was a lamp which shineth and [44] giveth light: and ye were pleased to glory now \(^{1591}\) in his light. \(^{1592}\) But I have witness greater than that of John: the works which my Father hath given me to accomplish, [45] those works which I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. \(^{1593}\) And the Father which sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his [46] voice at any time, nor seen his appearance. \(^{1594}\) And his word abideth in you; because [47] in him whom he hath sent ye do not believe. \(^{1595}\) Search the scriptures, in which ye rejoice \(^{1596}\) [48] that ye have eternal life; \(^{1597}\) and they bear witness of me; and ye do not wish to come to [49, 50] [Arabic, p. 88] me, that ye may have eternal life. \(^{1598}\) I seek not praise of men. \(^{1599}\) But I know [51] you, that

1574 John v. 26.
1575 Borg. ms. reads his person.
1576 Borg. ms. reads his person.
1577 John v. 27.
1578 Lit. that; or, Verily.
1579 John v. 28.
1580 John v. 29.
1581 John v. 30.
1582 John v. 31.
1583 So Ciasca’s Arabic text. Borg. ms. has If I, and instead of and so, etc., simply a witness which is not true, etc.; but its text of the next sentence is quite corrupt.
1584 So Ciasca’s Arabic text. Borg. ms. has If I, and instead of and so, etc., simply a witness which is not true, etc.; but its text of the next sentence is quite corrupt.
1585 John v. 32.
1586 John v. 33.
1587 John v. 34.
1588 Or, be saved.
1589 John v. 35.
1590 Or, that (man).
1591 Were it not also in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (Brit. Mus. text) we should assume now to be a corruption of an original Arabic reading, for a season (cf. Syr.).
1592 John v. 40.
1593 John v. 41.
1594 John v. 42.
the love of God is not in you. 1600 I am come in the name of my Father, and ye received me not; but if another come in his own name, that one will [52] ye receive. 1601 And how can ye believe, while ye receive praise one from another, and [53] praise from God, the One, ye seek not? 1602 Can it be that ye think that I will accuse you before the Father? Ye have one that accuseth you, Moses, in whom ye have [54] rejoiced. 1603 If ye believed Moses, ye would believe me also; Moses wrote of me. 1605 And if ye believed not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

Section XXIII.

[1] 1606 And Jesus departed thence, and came to the side of the sea of Galilee, and went [2] up into the mountain, and sat there. 1607 And there came unto him great multitudes, having with them lame, and blind, and dumb, and maimed, and many others, and [3] they cast them at the feet of Jesus: 1608 for they had seen all the signs which he did in [4] Jerusalem, when they were gathered at the feast. 1609 And he healed them all. 1610 And those multitudes marvelled when they saw dumb men speak, and maimed men healed, and lame men walk, and blind men see; and they praised the God of Israel.

[5] 1611 And Jesus called his disciples, and said unto them, I have compassion on this multitude, because of their continuing with me three days, having nothing to eat; and to send them away fasting I am not willing, lest they faint in the way, 1612 some of them having [6] (Arabic, p. 89) come from far. 1613 His disciples said unto him, Whence have we in the desert [7] bread wherewith to satisfy all this multitude? 1614 Jesus said unto them, How [8] many loaves have ye? 1615 They said unto him, Seven, and a few small fishes. And he [9] commanded the multitudes to sit down upon the ground; 1616 and he took those seven loaves and the fish, and blessed, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before [10] them; and the disciples set before the multitudes. 1617 And they all ate, and were satisfied: and they took that which remained over of the fragments, seven basketfuls. [11] 1618 And

---

1600 John v. 43.
1601 John v. 44.
1602 John v. 45.
1603 This word (often used by our translator) means in Syriac (transposed) believe, think, hope (cf. § 8, 8, note).
1604 John iv. 46.
1605 John v. 47.
1606 Matt. xv. 29.
1607 Matt. xv. 30a.
1608 John iv. 45b.
1609 Matt. xv. 30b.
1610 Matt. xv. 31.
1611 Matt. xv. 32.
1612 Mark viii. 3b.
1613 Matt. xv. 33.
1614 Matt. xv. 34.
1615 Matt. xv. 35.
1616 Matt. xv. 36.
1617 Matt. xv. 37.
1618 Matt. xv. 38.
the people that ate were four thousand men, besides the women and children. [12] And when the multitudes departed, he went up into the boat, and came to the borders of Magada.

[13] And the Pharisees and Sadducees came to him, and began to seek a discussion with him. And they asked him to shew them a sign from heaven, tempting him. [14] And Jesus sighed within himself, and said, What sign seeketh this evil and adulterous generation? It seeketh a sign, and it shall not be given a sign, except the sign [15] of Jonah the prophet. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not be given a [16] sign. And he left them, and went up into the boat, and went away to that side.

[17] And his disciples forgot to take with them bread, and there was not with them [18] in the boat, not even one loaf. And Jesus charged them, and said, Take heed, and guard yourselves from the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees, and from the [19] leaven of Herod. And they reflected within themselves that they had taken with them [20] no bread. And Jesus knew, and said unto them, Why think ye within yourselves, O ye of little faith, and are anxious, because ye have no bread? until now do ye not perceive, neither understand? is your heart yet hard? And have ye eyes, and yet see not? [22] [Arabic, p. 90] and have ye ears, and yet hear not? and do ye not remember when I brake those five loaves for five thousand? and how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye up? They said, Twelve. He said unto them, And the seven also for four thousand: how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye up? They [24] said, Seven. He said unto them, How have ye not understood that I spake not to you because of the bread, but that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees? Then they understood that he spake, not that they should beware of the leaven of the bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees, which he called leaven.
[26] And after that, he came to Bethsaida. And they brought to him a certain blind man, and besought him that he would touch him. And he took the hand of that blind man, and led him out without the village, and spat in his eyes, and laid his hand on him, and asked him, What seest thou? And that blind man looked intently, and said unto him, I see men as trees walking. And he placed his hand again on his eyes; and they were restored, and he saw everything clearly. And he sent him to his house, and said, Do not enter even into the village, nor tell any man in the village.

[31] And Jesus went forth, and his disciples, to the villages of Caesarea Philippi. And while he was going in the way, and his disciples alone, he asked his disciples, and said, What do men say of me that I am, the Son of man? They said unto him, Some say, John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. He said unto them, And ye, what say ye that I am? Simon Cephas answered [36] and said, Thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon son of Jonah: flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say unto thee also, that thou art Cephas, and on this rock will I build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. To thee will I give the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. And he sternly charged his disciples, and warned them that they should not tell any man concerning him, that he was the Messiah. And henceforth began Jesus to shew to his disciples that he was determined to go to Jerusalem, and suffer much, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and

1641 Mark viii. 22.
1642 Lit. one, probably representing Syriac idiom (cf. Sinaitic?).
1643 Mark viii. 23.
1644 The Peshitta also omits on him.
1645 Mark viii. 24.
1646 Mark viii. 25.
1647 An intransitive word.
1648 Mark viii. 26.
1649 Mark viii. 27a.
1650 Matt. xvi. 13b.
1651 Or, his disciples being alone. There is no such clause in the Syriac versions (Pesh., Sin.).
1652 The Arabic, which reappears in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (Brit. Mus. text), and seems to represent the consonantal text of the Peshitta, is awkward. § 23, 34 (Arabic), shows, however, that the rendering given in the text is the meaning intended by the translator.
1654 Matt. xvi. 15.
1655 Matt. xvi. 16.
1656 Matt. xvi. 17.
1657 Matt. xvi. 18.
1658 Same Arabic word in both places. See note to § 5, 11.
1659 Matt. xvi. 19.
1660 Matt. xvi. 20.
1661 Matt. xvi. 21a.
1662 The word is freely used in this work in the post-classical sense of about to.
1663 Mark viii. 31b.
of the scribes, and be killed, and on the third day rise. 1664 And he was speaking plainly. 1665 And Simon Cephas, as one grieved for him, said, Far be thou, my Lord, from that. 1666 And he turned, and looked upon his disciples, and rebuked Simon, and said, 1667 Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou art a stumblingblock unto me: for thou thinkest not of what pertains to God, but of what pertains to men.

1668 And Jesus called the multitudes with his disciples, and said unto them, Whosoever would come after me, let him deny himself, and take his cross every day, and come after me. 1669 And whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever loseth his life for my sake, and for the sake of my gospel, shall save it.

1670 What shall a man profit, if he gain all the world, and destroy his own life, or lose it? 1671 What shall [48] a man profit, if he gain all the world, and destroy his own life, or lose it? 1672 or what [49] [Arabic, p. 92] will a man give in ransom for his life? 1673 Whosoever shall deny me and my sayings in this sinful and adulterous generation, the Son of man also will [50] deny him, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with his holy angels. 1674 For the Son of man is about to come in the glory of his Father with his holy angels; and then shall he reward each man according to his works.

Section XXIV.

[1] 1675 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There be here now some standing that shall not taste death, until they see the kingdom of God come with strength, and the Son of man who cometh in his kingdom.

[2] 1676 And after six days Jesus took Simon Cephas, and James, and John his brother, and brought them up into a high mountain, the three of them only. 1677 And while they were praying, Jesus changed, and became after the fashion of another person; 1678 and his face shone like the sun,
and his raiment was very white like the snow, and as [5] the light of lightning, so that nothing on earth can whiten like it. 1685 And there appeared [6] unto him Moses and Elijah talking to Jesus. 1687 And they thought that the time [7] of his decease which was to be accomplished at Jerusalem was come. 1688 And Simon and those that were with him were heavy in the drowsiness of sleep; and with effort they roused themselves, and saw his glory, and those two men that were standing with him. [8] [Arabic, p. 93] 1689 And when they began to depart from him, Simon said unto Jesus, My Master, it is good for us to be here: 1690 and if thou wilt, we will make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah; 1691 not knowing [10] what he said, because of the fear which took possession of them. 1692 And while he [11] was yet saying that, a bright cloud overshadowed them. 1693 And when they saw Moses [12] and Elijah that they had entered into that cloud, they feared again. 1694 And a voice was heard out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, whom I have chosen; [13] hear ye therefore him. 1695 And when this voice was heard, Jesus was found alone. [14] 1696 And the disciples, when they heard the voice, fell on their faces from the fear which [15] took hold of them. 1697 And Jesus came and touched them and said, Arise, be not afraid. 1698 And they lifted up their eyes, and saw Jesus as he was.

[17] 1699 And when they went down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, and said unto them, Tell not what ye have seen to any man, until the Son of man rise from [18] among the dead. 1700 And they kept the word within themselves, and told no man in [19] those days what they had seen. 1701 And they reflected among themselves, What is this [20] word which he spake unto us, I, when I am risen from among the dead? 1702 And his disciples asked him, and said, What is that which the scribes say, then, that Elijah [21] must first come? 1703 He said unto them, Elijah cometh first to set in order everything, [Arabic, p. 94] and as it was written of the Son of man, that he should suffer many things, [22] and be rejected. 1704 But I say unto you, that Elijah is come, and they knew him not, and have done unto him whatsoever they desired, as it was written of him. [23, 24] 1705 In like manner the Son of man is to suffer of them. 1706 Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them concerning John the Baptist.
[25] 1707 And on that day whereon they came down from the mountain, there met him a multitude of many people standing with his disciples, and the scribes were discussing [26] with them. 1708 And the people, when they saw Jesus, were perplexed, 1709 and in the [27] midst of their joy hastened 1710 and saluted him. 1711 And on that day came certain of the Pharisees, and said unto him, Get thee out, and go hence; for Herod seeketh [28] to kill thee. 1712 Jesus said unto them, Go ye and say to this fox, Behold, I am casting out demons, and I heal to-day and to-morrow, and on the third day I am perfected. 29 Nevertheless I must be watchful 1714 to-day and to-morrow, and on the last day I shall depart; for it cannot be that a prophet perish outside of Jerusalem.

[30] 1715 And after that, there came to him a man from that multitude, and fell upon his knees, and said unto him, I beseech thee, my Lord, look upon my son; 1716 he is my [31] only child: and the spirit cometh upon him suddenly. 1717 A lunacy 1718 hath come upon [32] him, and he meeteth with evils. 1719 And when it cometh upon him, it beateth him about; 1720 and he foameth, and gnasheth his teeth, and wasteth; 1721 and many times it hath thrown him into the water and into the fire to destroy him, and it hardly leaveth him after [34] [Arabic, p. 95] bruising him. 1723 And I brought him near to thy disciples, and they could [35] not heal him. 1724 Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, till when shall I be with you? and till when shall I bear with you? bring thy son [36] hither. 1725 And he brought him unto him: and when the spirit saw him, immediately [37] it beat him about; and he fell upon the ground, and was raging and foaming. 1726 And Jesus asked his father, How long is the time during which he hath been thus? He [38] said unto him, From his youth until now. 1727 But, my Lord, help me wherein thou [39] canst, and have mercy upon me. 1728 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe! All [40] things are possible to him that believeth. 1729 And immediately the father of the child [41] cried out, weeping, and said, I

---

1707 Mark ix. 14.
1708 Mark ix. 15.
1709 This rendering assumes that the diacritical point is due to a clerical error. The text as printed can hardly be translated without forcing.
1710 This Arabic word repeatedly represents a Syriac ran (cf. § 53, 11). A different word is so used in § 26, 21.
1712 Luke xiii. 32.
1713 Luke xiii. 33.
1714 The Syriac word used in the Peshitta is here translated just as it was translated in § 1, 79 (see note); but the Greek shows that in the present passage the Syriac word means go about (cf. Cur.).
1717 Luke ix. 39a; Matt. xvii. 15b.
1718 Lit. The son-of-the-roof, a Syriac phrase meaning a demon of lunacy.
1719 Mark ix. 18a.
1720 A word used in Arabic of the devil producing insanity; but here it reproduces the Peshitta.
1721 Lit. becometh light, but a comparison with the Peshitta suggests that we should change one diacritical point and read withereth, as in Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary. An equally easy emendation would be wasteth.
1722 Matt. xvii. 15c; Luke ix. 39c.
1723 Matt. xvii. 16.
1724 Matt. xvii. 17.
1725 Mark ix. 20.
1726 Mark ix. 21.
1727 Mark ix. 22b.
1728 Mark ix. 23.
1729 Mark ix. 24.
believe, my Lord; help my lack of faith. 1730 And when Jesus saw the hastening of the people, and their coming at the sound, he rebuked that unclean spirit, and said to it, Thou dumb spirit that speakest not, I command thee, 1731 come out of him, and enter not again into him. 1732 And that spirit, devil, 1733 cried out much, and bruised him, and came out; and that child fell as one dead, and 1734 many thought that he had died. 1735 But Jesus took him by his hand, and raised him up, and gave him to his father; and that child was healed from that hour. 1736 And the people all marvelled at the greatness of God.

1737 And when Jesus entered into the house, his disciples came, and asked him privately, 1738 and said unto him, Why were we not able to heal him? 1739 Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief. Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Remove hence; [47] and it shall remove; and nothing shall overcome you. 1740 But it is impossible to cast out this kind by anything except by fasting and prayer.

1741 And when he went forth thence, they passed through Galilee: and he would not that any man should know it. 1742 And he taught his disciples, and said unto them, [50] Keep ye these sayings in your ears and your hearts: for the Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, he [51] shall rise on the third day. 1743 But they knew not the word which he spake unto them, for it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it; and they feared to [52] ask him about this word. 1744 And they were exceeding sorrowful.

Section XXV.

[1] 1747 And in that day this thought presented itself to his disciples, and they said, which [2] haply should be the greatest among them. 1748 And when they came to Capernaum, and entered

1730 Mark ix. 25.
1731 In Syriac, but not in Arabic, the word means deaf or dumb, according to the context.
1732 Ciasca’s Arabic follows Vat. ms. in inserting a that (pronoun) after thee.
1733 Mark ix. 26.
1734 Doubtless alternative renderings of the same Syriac word (demon).
1735 Mark ix. 27a; Luke ix. 42b.
1736 Matt. xvii. 18b; Luke ix. 43a.
1737 Mark ix. 28.
1738 Lit. between themselves and him.
1739 Matt. xvii. 20.
1740 Mark ix. 29b.
1741 Mark ix. 30.
1742 Or, about him.
1743 Mark ix. 31a; Luke ix. 44a.
1744 Mark ix. 31b.
1746 Matt. xvii. 23b.
1747 Luke ix. 46.
1748 Borg. ms. omits among them.
1749 Mark ix. 33.
into the house, Jesus said unto them, What were ye considering in the [3] way among yourselves?

1750 And they were silent because they had considered that matter.

[4] 1751 And when Simon went forth without, those that received two dirhams for the tribute came to Cephas, and said unto him, Doth your master not give his two [5] dirhams? He said unto them, Yea. 1752 And when Cephas entered the house, Jesus anticipated him, and said unto him, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive custom and tribute? from their sons, or from [6] [Arabic, p. 97] strangers? 1753 Simon said unto him, From strangers. Jesus said unto him, Children then are free. Simon said unto him, Yea. Jesus said unto him, [7] Give thou also unto them, like the stranger. 1754 But, lest it trouble them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook; and the first fish that cometh up, open its mouth, and thou shalt find a stater: take therefore that, and give for me and thee.

[8] 1755 And in that hour came the disciples to Jesus, and said unto him, Who, thinkest [9] thou, is greater in the kingdom of heaven? 1756 And Jesus knew the thought of their heart, and called a child, and set him in the midst, and took him in his arms, and [10] said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye do not return, and become as children, [11] ye shall not enter the kingdom of heaven. Every one that shall receive in my name such as this child hath received me: and whosoever receiveth me receiveth [12] not me, but him that sent me. 1761 And he who is little in your company, the same [13] shall be great. But whosoever shall injure one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a great millstone should be hanged about his neck, and he should be drowned in the depths of the sea.

[14] 1765 John answered and said, Our Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; [15] and we prevented him, because he followed not thee with us. 1766 Jesus said unto them, Prevent him not; for no man doeth powers in my name, and can hasten to speak evil [16] of me. 1767 Every one who is not in opposition to you is with you. 1768 Woe unto the world [Arabic, p. 98] because of trials! 1769 but woe unto that man by whose hand the trials come! [18] 1770 If thy hand or thy foot injure thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee; for it is better for thee to enter into life being halt or

1780 Mark ix. 34a.
1781 Matt. xvii. 24b.
1782 Matt. xvii. 25.
1784 Matt. xvii. 27.
1785 Matt. xviii. 1.
1786 Luke ix. 47a; Mark ix. 36.
1787 Lit. one (Syriac idiom).
1788 Matt. xviii. 3.
1790 Mark ix. 37b.
1791 Luke ix. 48c.
1792 In the present work this word frequently means synagogue.
1793 Matt. xviii. 6.
1794 Lit. millstone of an ass.
1795 Luke ix. 49.
1796 Mark ix. 39.
1797 Luke ix. 50b.
1798 Matt. xviii. 7a, c.
1799 i.e., experiences that test one; or, seductions. The word is variously used.
1800 Matt. xviii. 8.
maimed, and not that thou shouldest have two hands or two feet, and fall into the hell of fire that burneth\textsuperscript{1771} for ever; \[19, 20\] \textsuperscript{1772}where their worm dieth not, and their fire is not quenched. \textsuperscript{1773}And if thine eye seduce\textsuperscript{1774} [21] thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee; \textsuperscript{1775}for it is better for thee to enter the kingdom of God with one eye, than that thou shouldest have two eyes, and fall into the [22, 23] fire of Gehenna; \textsuperscript{1776}where their worm dieth not, and their fire is not quenched. \textsuperscript{1777}Every [24] one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. \textsuperscript{1778}How good [25] is salt! but if the salt also be tasteless, wherewith shall it be salted? \textsuperscript{1779}It is fit neither for the land nor for dung, but they cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him [26] hear. \textsuperscript{1780}Have ye salt in yourselves, and be in peace one with another.

\[27\] \textsuperscript{1781}And he arose from thence, and came to the borders of Judaea beyond Jordan: and there went unto him thither great multitudes, and he healed them; and he taught [28] them also, according to his custom. \textsuperscript{1782}And the Pharisees came unto him, tempting [29] him, and asking him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? \textsuperscript{1783}He said, What [30] did Moses command you? \textsuperscript{1784}They said, Moses made it allowable for us,\textit{ saying}, Whosoever [31] will, let him write a writing of divorcement, and put away his wife. \textsuperscript{1785}Jesus answered and said unto them, \textsuperscript{1786}Have ye not read, He that made \textit{them} from the beginning [32] made them male and female, and said, \textsuperscript{1787}For this reason shall the man leave his father [Arabic, p. 99] and his mother, and cleave to his wife; and they both shall be one body? \textsuperscript{33} \textsuperscript{1788}So then they are not twain, but one body; the thing, then, which God hath [34] joined together, let no man put asunder. \textsuperscript{1789}And those Pharisees said unto him, Why did Moses consent\textsuperscript{1790} that a \textit{man} should give a writing of divorcement and put her away? \textsuperscript{35} \textsuperscript{1791}Jesus said unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts gave you leave [36] to divorce your wives; but in the beginning it was not so. \textsuperscript{1792}I say unto you, Whosoever putteh away\textsuperscript{1793} his wife without fornication, and marrieth another, hath exposed [37] her to adultery. \textsuperscript{1794}And his disciples, when

\begin{footnotes}
\item\textsuperscript{1771} Or, \textit{is kindled}.
\item\textsuperscript{1772} Mark ix. 44.
\item\textsuperscript{1773} Matt. xviii. 9a.
\item\textsuperscript{1774} See note to § 25, 17.
\item\textsuperscript{1775} Mark ix. 47b.
\item\textsuperscript{1776} Mark ix. 48.
\item\textsuperscript{1777} Mark ix. 49.
\item\textsuperscript{1778} Mark ix. 50a.
\item\textsuperscript{1779} Luke xiv. 34b; Luke xiv. 35.
\item\textsuperscript{1780} Mark ix. 50c.
\item\textsuperscript{1781} Mark x. 1.
\item\textsuperscript{1782} Mark x. 2.
\item\textsuperscript{1783} Mark x. 3.
\item\textsuperscript{1784} Mark x. 4.
\item\textsuperscript{1785} Mark x. 5a.
\item\textsuperscript{1786} Matt. xix. 4.
\item\textsuperscript{1787} Matt. xix. 5.
\item\textsuperscript{1788} Matt. xix. 6.
\item\textsuperscript{1789} Matt. xix. 7.
\item\textsuperscript{1790} So the Arabic; but the Syriac versions follow the Greek, and \textit{consent} is doubtless a (very easy, and, in view of the succeeding context, natural) clerical error for an original Arabic \textit{charge}.
\item\textsuperscript{1791} Mark x. 8.
\item\textsuperscript{1792} Matt. xix. 9a.
\item\textsuperscript{1793} Or, \textit{leaveth}.
\item\textsuperscript{1794} Mark x. 10.
\end{footnotes}
he entered the house, asked him again [38] about that. 1795 And he said unto them, Every one who puttheth away his wife, and [39] marrieth another, hath exposed her to adultery. 1796 And any woman that leaveth her husband, and becometh another’s, hath committed adultery. 1797 And whosoever marrieth [40] her that is divorced hath committed adultery. 1798 And his disciples said unto him, If there be between the man and the woman such a case1799 as this, it is not good for [41] a man to marry. 1800 He said unto them, Not every man can endure this saying, except [42] him to whom it is given. 1801 There are eunuchs which from their mother’s womb are born so; and there are eunuchs which through men became eunuchs; and there are eunuchs which made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He that is able to be content, let him be content. 1802 Then they brought to him children, that he should lay his hand upon them, and [44] pray: and his disciples were rebuking those that were bringing them. 1803 And Jesus saw, and it was distressing to him; and he said unto them, Suffer the children to [Arabic, p. 100] come unto me, and prevent them not; for those that are like these have [45] the kingdom of God. 1804 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever receiveth not the [46] kingdom of God as this child, shall not enter it. 1805 And he took them in his arms, and laid his hand upon them, and blessed them.

Section XXVI.

[1, 2] 1806 And there came unto him publicans and sinners to hear his word. 1807 And the scribes and the Pharisees murmured, and said, This man receiveth sinners, and [3] eateth with them. 1808 And Jesus, when he beheld their murmuring, spake unto them [4] this parable: 1809 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if one of them were lost, would not leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go and seek the straying one [5] till he found it? 1810 Verily I say unto you, When he findeth it, he will rejoice over it [6] more than over the ninety-nine that went not astray; 1811 and bear it on his shoulders, and bring it to his house, and call his friends and neighbours, 1812 and say unto them, [7]
Rejoice with me, since I have found my straying sheep. \(^{1814}\) So your Father which is in heaven willeth\(^{1815}\) not that one of these little ones that have strayed should perish. [8] and he seeketh for them repentance. \(^{1816}\) I say unto you, Thus there shall be rejoicing in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety-nine righteous persons that do not need repentance.

[9] \(^{1817}\) And what woman having ten drachmas would lose one of them, and not light a [10] lamp, and sweep the house, and seek it with care till she found it; \(^{1818}\) and when she found it, call her friends and neighbours, and say unto them, Rejoice with me, as I [11] have found my drachma that was lost? \(^{1819}\) I say unto you, Thus there shall be joy [Arabic, p. 101] before the angels of God over the one sinner that repenteth, more than over the ninety-nine righteous persons that do not need repentance.

[12, 13] \(^{1820}\) And Jesus spake unto them also another parable: \(^{1821}\) A man had two sons: and the younger son said unto him, My father, give me my portion that belongeth to [14] me of thy goods. \(^{1822}\) And he divided between them his property. And after a few days the younger son gathered everything that belonged to him, and went into a [15] far country, and there squandered his property by living prodigally. \(^{1823}\) And when he had exhausted everything he had, there occurred a great dearth in that country. [16] \(^{1824}\) And when he was in want, he went and joined himself to one of the people of a city [17] of that country; and that man sent him into the field\(^{1825}\) to feed the swine. \(^{1826}\) And he used to long to fill his belly with the carob that those swine were eating: and no man [18] gave him. \(^{1827}\) And when he returned unto himself, he said, How many hired servants now in my father’s house have bread enough and to spare, while I here perish with [19] hunger! \(^{1828}\) I will arise and go to my father’s house, and say unto him, My father, \(^{1829}\) I [20] have sinned in heaven and before thee, and am not worthy now to be called thy [21] son: make me as one of thy hired servants. \(^{1830}\) And he arose, and came to his father. But his father saw him while he was at a distance, and was moved with compassion [22] for him, and ran,\(^{1831}\) and fell on his breast,\(^{1832}\) and kissed him. \(^{1833}\)

And his son said unto him, My father, I have sinned in heaven and before thee, and am not

---

185  Strictly, *preferreth*, but used also as in the text.
190  Luke xv. 11.
194  Luke xv. 15.
195  This word is regularly used throughout this work in this sense.
196  Luke xv. 16.
201  See above, § 24, 26, note.
202  Did not Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (Brit. Mus. text) also read *breast*, we might assume it to be a clerical error for a very similar (less common) word (same as the Syriac) for *neck*.
worthy to be [23] called thy son. 1844 His father said unto his servants, Bring forth a stately robe, and put [24] it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and put on him shoes on his feet: 1845 and bring and [25] slay a fatted ox, that we may eat and make merry: 1846 for this my son was dead, and is [26] [Arabic, p. 102] alive; and was lost, and is found. 1847 And they began to be merry. 1848 Now his elder son was in the field; and when he came and drew near to the house, [27] he heard the sound of many singing. 1849 1850 And he called one of the lads, and asked him [28] what this was. 1851 He said unto him, Thy brother hath arrived; and thy father hath [29] slain a fatted ox, since he hath received him safe and sound. 1852 1853 And he was angry, [30] and would not enter; so his father went out, and besought him to enter. 1854 And he said to his father, How many years do I serve thee in bondage, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine; and thou hast never given me a kid, that I might [31] make merry with my friends? 1855 but this thy son, when he had squandered thy [32] property with harlots, and come, thou hast slain for him a fatted ox. 1856 His father said unto him, My son, thou art at all times with me, and everything I have is [33] thine. 1857 It behoveth thee to rejoice and make merry, since this thy brother was dead, and is alive; and was lost, and is found.

[34] 1858 And he spake a parable unto his disciples: There was a rich man, and he had [35] a steward; and he was accused to him that he had squandered his property. 1859 So his lord called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear regarding thee? Give me the account of thy stewardship; for it is now impossible that thou shouldest [36] be a steward for me. 1860 The steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh from me the stewardship? To dig I am not able; and to beg I [37] am ashamed. 1861 I know what I will do, that, when I go out of the stewardship, they [38] may receive me into their houses. 1862 And he called one after another of his lord’s [39] debtors, and said to the first, How much owest thou my lord? 1863 He said unto him, An hundred portions of oil. He said unto him, Take thy writing, and sit down, and write [40] quickly fifty portions. 1865 And he said to the next, And thou, how much owest thou my lord? He said

1844 Luke xvi. 22.
1845 Luke xvi. 23.
1849 Luke xvi. 27.
1851 One word.
1852 Luke xvi. 29.
1855 Luke xvi. 32.
1858 Luke xvi. 3.
1859 Luke xvi. 4.
1860 Luke xvi. 5.
1862 Luke xvi. 22.
1865 Luke xvi. 32.
1867 Luke xvi. 2.
1868 Luke xvi. 3.
1869 Luke xvi. 4.
1870 Luke xvi. 5.
1872 Luke xvi. 22.
1875 Luke xvi. 32.
1877 Luke xvi. 2.
1878 Luke xvi. 3.
1879 Luke xvi. 4.
1880 Luke xvi. 5.
1885 Luke xvi. 32.
1887 Luke xvi. 2.
1888 Luke xvi. 3.
1890 Luke xvi. 5.
1892 Luke xvi. 22.
1895 Luke xvi. 32.
1897 Luke xvi. 2.
1898 Luke xvi. 3.
1899 Luke xvi. 4.
1900 Luke xvi. 5.
unto him, An hundred cors of wheat. He said unto him, Take [41] [Arabic, p. 103] thy writing, and sit down, and write eighty cors. 1858 And our1859 lord commended the sinful steward1860 because he had done a wise deed; for the children [42] of this world are wiser than the children of the light in this their age. 1861 And I also say unto you, Make unto yourselves friends with the wealth of this unrighteousness;1862 [43] so that, when it is exhausted, they may receive you into their tents for ever. 1863 He who is faithful in1864 a little is faithful also in much: and he who is unrighteous in a [44] little is unrighteous also in much. 1865 If then in the wealth of unrighteousness ye were [45] not trustworthy, who will intrust you with the truth?1866 1867 If ye are not found faithful in what does not belong to you, who will give you what belongeth to you?

Section XXVII.

[1] 1868 Therefore the kingdom of heaven is like a certain king, who would make a [2] reckoning with his servants. 1869 And when he began to make it, they brought to him one who [3] owed him ten talents.1870 1871 And because he had not wherewith to pay, his lord ordered that he should be sold, he, and his wife, and children, and all that he [4] had, and payment be made. 1872 So that servant fell down and worshipped him, and said unto him, My lord, have patience with me, and I shall pay thee everything. [5] 1873 And the lord of that servant had compassion, and released him, and forgave him his [6] debt. 1874 And that servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him [Arabic, p. 104] a hundred pence;1875 and he took him, and dealt severely with him, and said [7] unto him, Give me what thou owest. 1876 So the fellow-servant fell down at his [8] feet, and besought him, and said, Grant me respite, and I will pay thee. 1877 And he would not; but took him, and cast him into prison, till he should give him his debt. [9] 1878 And when their fellow-servants saw what happened, it distressed them much; and [10] they came and told their lord of all that had
taken place. 1879 Then his lord called him, and said unto him, \textit{Thou} wicked servant, all that debt I forgave thee, because [11] thou besoughtest me: \textit{1880} was it not then incumbent on thee also to have mercy on thy [12] fellow-servant, as I had mercy on thee? \textit{1881} And his lord became wroth, and delivered [13] him to the scourgers, till he should pay all that he owed. \textit{1882} So shall my Father which is in heaven do unto you, if one forgive not his brother his wrong conduct\textit{1884} from [14] his heart. \textit{1885} Take heed within\textit{1886} yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he [15] repent, forgive him. \textit{1887} And if he act wrongly towards thee seven times in a day, and on that day return seven times unto thee, and say, I repent towards thee; forgive him. \textit{1888} And if thy brother act wrongly towards thee, go and reprove him between thee and [17] him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. \textit{1889} But if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two, and so\textit{1890} at the mouth of two or three every saying shall [18] be established. \textit{1891} And if he listen not to these also, tell the congregation;\textit{1892} and if he listen not even to the congregation, let him be unto thee as a publican and a Gentile.\textit{1893} \textit{19} \textit{1894} Verily I say unto you, All that ye bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: [20] and what ye loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. \textit{1895} I say unto you also, If two of you agree on earth, so shall my Father which is in heaven do. \textit{1896} For where two or three are gathered in my name, there [22] am I amongst them. \textit{1897} Then Cephas drew near to him, and said unto him, My Lord, how many times, if my brother act wrongly towards me, should I forgive him? [23] until seven times? \textit{1898} Jesus said unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven; but, Until seventy [24] times seven, seven.\textit{1900} \textit{1901} And the servant that knoweth his lord’s will, and maketh not [25] ready for him according to his will, shall meet with much punishment; \textit{1902} but he that knoweth not, and doeth something for which he meriteth punishment, shall meet with slight punishment. Every one to whom much hath been given, much shall be asked of him; and he that hath had much committed to him, much shall be \textit{26} required

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{1879} Matt. xviii. 32.
\item \textit{1880} Matt. xviii. 33.
\item \textit{1881} The interrogative particle is lacking in the Arabic.
\item \textit{1882} Matt. xviii. 34.
\item \textit{1883} Matt. xviii. 35.
\item \textit{1884} Or, folly.
\item \textit{1885} Luke xiii. 3.
\item \textit{1886} A very close reproduction of the Syriac.
\item \textit{1887} Luke xvii. 4.
\item \textit{1888} Matt. xviii. 15.
\item \textit{1889} Matt. xviii. 16.
\item \textit{1890} Or, for.
\item \textit{1891} Matt. xviii. 17.
\item \textit{1892} This word usually means synagogue in this work.
\item \textit{1893} Or, heathen.
\item \textit{1894} Matt. xviii. 18.
\item \textit{1895} Matt. xviii. 19.
\item \textit{1896} Or, to ask everything, it shall.
\item \textit{1897} Matt. xviii. 20.
\item \textit{1898} Matt. xviii. 21.
\item \textit{1899} Matt. xviii. 22.
\item \textit{1900} So Vat. ms., following the Syriac versions; Borg. ms. has only one seven.
\item \textit{1891} Luke xii. 47.
\item \textit{1892} Luke xii. 48.
\end{itemize}
at his hand. 1903I came to cast fire upon the earth; and I would that it had [27] been kindled already.1904 1905And I have a baptism to be baptized with, and greatly am [28] I straitened till it be accomplished. 1906See that ye despise not1907 one of these little ones that believe in me. Verily I say unto you, Their angels at all times see the [29] face of my Father which is in heaven. 1908The Son of man came to save the thing which was lost.

[30] 1909And after that, Jesus walked in Galilee; and he did not like to walk in Judæa, [31] because the Jews sought to kill him. 1910And there came people who told him of [32] the Galilæans, those whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 1911Jesus answered and said unto them, Do ye imagine that those Galilæans were sinners [33] more than all the Galilæans, so that this thing has come upon them? 1912Nay. Verily I say unto you now,1913 that ye shall all also, if ye repent not, likewise perish. [34] 1914Or perchance those eighteen on whom the palace fell in Siloam, and slew them, do ye imagine that they were to be condemned1915 more than all the people that dwell [35] [Arabic, p. 106] in Jerusalem? Nay. 1916Verily I say unto you, If ye do not all repent, ye shall perish like them.

[36] 1917And he spake unto them this parable: A man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; [37] and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. 1918So he said to the husbandman, Lo, three years do I come and seek fruit on this fig tree, and find [38] none: cut it down; why doth it render the ground unoccupied? 1919The husbandman said unto him, My lord, leave it this year also, that I may dig about it, and dung [39] it; 1920then if it bear fruit—! and if not, then cut it down in the coming year.

[40] 1921And when Jesus was teaching on the sabbath day in one of the synagogues, [41] there was there a woman that had a spirit of disease eighteen years; 1922and she was [42] bowed down, and could not straighten herself at all. 1923And Jesus saw her, and called [43] her, and said unto her, Woman, be loosed from thy disease. 1924And he put his hand [44] upon her; and immediately she

1903 Luke xii. 49.
1904 Lit. beforehand; and so often.
1906 Matt. xviii. 10.
1907 Or, repeating a letter, See that ye despise not.
1908 Matt. xviii. 11.
1909 John vii. 1.
1911 Luke xiii. 2.
1912 Luke xiii. 3.
1913 Borg. ms. omits now.
1915 See note, § 10, 13.
1916 Luke xiii. 5.
1918 Luke xiii. 7.
1921 Luke xiii. 10.
1922 Luke xiii. 11.
was straightened, and praised God. 1925And the chief\footnote{Luke xiii. 14.} of the synagogue answered with anger, because Jesus had healed on a sabbath, and said unto the multitudes, There are six days in which work ought to be done; [45] come in them and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. 1927\textbf{But} Jesus answered and said unto him, \textit{Ye hypocrites}, doth not each of you on the sabbath day loose [46] his ox or his ass from the manger, and go and water it? 1928\textit{Ought} not this woman, who is a daughter of Abraham, and whom the devil\footnote{Luke xiii. 15.} hath bound eighteen years, [47] to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? 1930And when he said this, they were all put to shame, those standing, who were opposing him:\footnote{Luke xiii. 17.} and all the people were pleased with all the wonders that proceeded from his hand.

\textbf{Section XXVIII.} 1932

\[1, 2\] [Arabic, p. 107] 1933And at that time the feast of tabernacles of the Jews drew near. 1934\textit{So} the brethren of Jesus said unto him, Remove now hence, and go to Judæa, that [3] thy disciples may see the deeds that thou doest. 1935\textit{For} no man doeth a thing secretly [4] and wisheth to be apparent. 1936\textit{If} thou doest this, shew thyself to the world. For [5] up to this time not even the brethren of Jesus believed on him. 1937\textit{Jesus} said unto them, \textit{My} time till now has not arrived; but as for you, your time is alway ready. 1938\textit{It} is not possible for the world to hate you; but me it hateth, for I bear witness [7] against it, that its deeds are evil. 1939\textit{As} for you, go ye up unto this feast: but I go [8] not up now to this feast; for my time has not yet been completed. 1940\textit{He} said this, and remained behind in Galilee.

\[9\] 1941\textit{But} when his brethren went up unto the feast, he journeyed from Galilee, and [10] came to the borders of Judæa, to the \textit{country} beyond Jordan; \textit{and} there came after [11] him great multitudes, and he healed them all there. 1943\textit{And} he went out, and proceeded [12] to the feast, not

---

1926 \textit{Lit. great (man).}
1927 Luke xiii. 15.
1928 Luke xiii. 16.
1929 \textit{Lit. calumniator.}
1931 \textit{cf. Syriac versions.}
1932 On margin of Vat. MS., in another hand: “This is the beginning of the second part of \textit{Diatessaron}, which means \textit{The Four.”} See p. 467 of Ciasca’s Essay, mentioned above (Introduction, 5).
1933 John vii. 2.
1934 John vii. 3.
1935 John vii. 4.
1936 John vii. 5.
1937 John vii. 6.
1938 John vii. 7.
1939 John vii. 8.
1940 John vii. 9.
1941 John vii. 10a; Matt. xix. 1b.
1942 Matt. xix. 2.
1943 John vii. 10b.
openly, but as one that conceals himself. 1943 And the Jews sought him [13] at the feast, and said, In what place is this man? 1944 And there occurred much murmuring there in the great multitude that came to the feast, on his account. For [14] some said, He is good: and others said, Nay, but he leadeth the people astray. 1946 But no man spake of him openly for fear of the Jews.

1947 But when the days of the feast of tabernacles were half over, Jesus went [16] up to the temple, and taught. 1948 And the Jews wondered, and said, How doth [17] this man know writing,1949 seeing he hath not learned? 1950 Jesus answered and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. 1952 Whoever wisheth to do his will understandeth my doctrine, whether it be from God, or whether I speak of mine own accord. [19] 1954 Whosoever speaketh of his own accord seeketh praise for himself; but whosoever seeketh praise for him that sent him, he is true, and unrighteousness in his heart [20] there is none. 1955 Did not Moses give you the law, and no man of you keepeth the [21] law? 1956 Why seek ye to kill me? The multitude answered and said unto him, Thou [22] hast demons; 1957 who seeketh to kill thee? 1958 Jesus answered and said unto them, I did [23] one deed, and ye all marvel because of this. 1959 Moses hath given you circumcision (not because it is from Moses, but it is from the fathers); and ye on the sabbath [24] circumcise a man. 1960 And if a man is circumcised on the sabbath day, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I healed on the sabbath [25] day the whole man? 1961 Judge not with hypocrisy, but judge righteous judgement.

1962 And some people from Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they seek to slay? [27] 1963 And lo, he discourseth with them openly, and they say nothing unto him. Think [28] you that our elders have learned that this is the Messiah indeed? 1964 But this man is known whence he is; and the Messiah, when he cometh, no man knoweth whence [29] he is. 1966 So Jesus lifted up his voice as he taught in the temple, and said, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and of my own accord am I not come, but he [30] [Arabic, p. 109] that sent me is true, he whom ye know not:

1944 John vii. 11.
1945 John vii. 12.
1948 John vii. 15.
1949 Or, the scripture.
1950 John vii. 16.
1951 This word ordinarily means knowledge, but is used in this work in the sense of doctrine. The commoner form occurs perhaps only in § 50, 2.
1952 John vii. 17.
1953 This word ordinarily means knowledge, but is used in this work in the sense of doctrine. The commoner form occurs perhaps only in § 50, 2.
1954 John vii. 18.
1956 John vii. 20.
1957 cf. § 14, 12.
1959 John vii. 22.
1960 John vii. 23.
1962 John vii. 25.
1964 John vii. 27.
1965 Or, will be.
1966 John vii. 28.
1967 but I know him; for I am [31] from him, and he sent me. 1968 And they sought to seize him: and no man [32] laid a hand on him, because his hour had not yet come. 1969 But many of the multitude believed on him; and they said, The Messiah, when he cometh, can it be that he will do more than these signs that this man doeth?

33 And a man of that multitude said unto our Lord, Teacher, say to my brother [34] that he divide with me the inheritance. 1971 Jesus said unto him, Man, who is it that [35] appointed me over you as a judge and divider? 1972 And he said unto his disciples, Take heed within yourselves of all inordinate desire; for it is not in abundance of [36] possessions that life shall be. 1973 And he gave them this parable: The ground of a [37] rich man brought forth abundant produce: 1974 and he pondered within himself, and [38] said, What shall I do, since I have no place to store my produce? 1975 And he said, I will do this: I will pull down the buildings of my barns, and build them, and make [39] them greater; and store there all my wheat and my goods. 1976 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid by for many years; take thine ease, eat, [40] drink, enjoy thyself. 1977 God said unto him, O thou of little intelligence, this night shall thy soul be taken from thee; and this that thou hast prepared, whose shall it [41] be? 1978 So is he that layeth up treasures for himself, and is not rich in God.

42 And while Jesus was going in the way, there came near to him a young man [42] of the rulers, 1981 and fell on his knees, and asked him, and said, Good Teacher, what is [43] it that I must do that I may have eternal life? 1982 Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou [44] me good, while there is none good but the one, even God? 1983 Thou knowest the commandments. 1984 If thou wouldest enter into life, keep the commandments. 1987 The young [Arabic, p. 110] man said unto him, Which of the commandments? 1988 Jesus said unto him, [46] Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not do injury, Honour thy father [47] and thy mother: and, Love thy neighbour as thyself. 1990 That young man

John vii. 29.
John vii. 30.
John vii. 31.
Luke xii. 15.
Luke xii. 16.
Luke xii. 17.
Luke xii. 18.
Luke xii. 20.
Mark x. 17.
From Matthew.
Mark x. 18.

The scribe who wrote the Vat. MS. wrote first God, the one, and then reversed the order by writing the Coptic letters for B and A over the words. (See above, Introduction, 5.)

Mark x. 19a.
Different words.
Matt. xix. 17b; Matt. xix. 18a.
Different words.
The same word as in Mark x. 19a.
Mark x. 19b.
Matt. xix. 19b; Matt. xix. 20.
said unto [48] him, All these have I kept from my youth: what then is it that I lack? 1991 And Jesus [49] looked intently at him, and loved him, and said unto him, 1992 If thou wouldest be perfect, what thou lackest is one thing: 1993 go away and sell everything that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and take thy [50] cross, and follow me. 1994 And that young man frowned at this word, and went away [51] feeling sad; for he was very rich. 1995 And when Jesus saw his sadness, he looked towards his disciples, and said unto them, How hard it is for them that have possessions to enter the kingdom of God!

Section XXIX.

[1] 1996 Verily I say unto you, It is difficult for a rich man to enter the kingdom of [2] heaven. 1997 And I say unto you also, that it is easier for a camel to enter the eye of [3] a needle, than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. 1998 And the disciples were wondering at these sayings. And Jesus answered and said unto them again, My children, how hard it is for those that rely on their possessions to enter the [4] kingdom of God! 1999 And those that were listening wondered more, and said amongst [5] themselves, being agitated, 2000 Who, thinkest thou, can be saved? 2001 And Jesus looked at them intently, and said unto them, With men this is not possible, but with God it is: [6] [Arabic, p. 111] it is possible for God to do everything. 2002 Simon Cephas said unto him, Lo, we have left everything, and followed thee; what is it, thinkest thou, that we [7] shall have? 2003 Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, Ye that have followed me, in the new world, when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also [8] shall sit on twelve thrones, and shall judge the twelve tribes of Israel. 2004 Verily I say unto you, No man leaveth houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or kinsfolk, or lands, because of the kingdom of God, or for [9] my sake, and the sake of my gospel, 2005 who shall not obtain 2006 many times as much in this [10] time, and in the world to come inherit eternal life: 2007 and now in this time, houses, and

1991 Mark x. 21a.
1993 From Mark.
1995 Luke xviii. 24a; Mark x. 23.
1999 Mark x. 26.
2001 Mark x. 27.
2002 Luke xviii. 28; Matt. xix. 27a & b.
2003 Matt. xix. 28.
2004 Mark x. 29b.
2006 Lit. meet with; or, be recompensed with.
2007 Mark x. 30b.
brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecution; [11] and in the world to come everlasting life. 2008 Many that are first shall be last, 2009 and that are last shall be first.

[12] 2010 And when the Pharisees heard all this, because of their love for wealth they [13] scoffed at him. 2011 And Jesus knew what was in their hearts, and said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves before men; while God knows your hearts: the thing that is lofty with men is base before God.

[14] 2012 And he began to say, A certain man was rich, and wore silk and purple, and enjoyed [15] himself every day in splendour; 2013 and there was a poor man named Lazarus, and [16] he was cast down at the door of the rich man, 2014 afflicted with sores, and he longed to fill [Arabic, p. 112] his belly with the crumbs that fell from the table of that rich man; yea, [17] even 2015 the dogs used to come and lick his sores. 2016 And it happened that that poor man died, and the angels conveyed him into the bosom of Abraham: and the [18] rich man also died, and was buried. 2017 And while he was being tormented in Hades, [19] he lifted up his eyes from afar, and saw Abraham with 2018 Lazarus in his bosom. 2019 And he called with a loud voice, and said, My father Abraham, have mercy upon me, and send Lazarus to wet the tip of his finger with water, and moisten my tongue [20] for me; for, behold, I am burned in this flame. 2020 Abraham said unto him, My son, remember that thou receivedst thy good things in thy life, and Lazarus his afflictions: [21] but now, behold, he is at rest here, and thou art tormented. 2021 And in addition to all this, there is between us and you a great abyss placed, so that they that would cross unto you from hence cannot, nor yet from thence do they cross unto [22] us. 2022 He said unto him, Then I beseech thee, my father, to send him to my father’s [23] house; 2023 for I have five brethren; let him go, that they also sin not, 2024 and come to [24] the abode of this torment. 2025 2026 Abraham said unto him, They have Moses and the [25] prophets; let them hear them. 2027 He said unto him, Nay, 2028 my father Abraham: but [26] let

308 Mark x. 31.
309 The Arabic words are not so strong.
311 Luke xvi. 15.
315 Or, so that.
316 Luke xvi. 22.
318 Or, and.
322 Luke xvi. 27.
324 The Syriac and Arabic versions here agree with the Greek. For a plausible suggestion as to the origin of the strange reading in the text, see Harris, The Diatessaron of Tatian, p. 21, who cites a parallel from Aphraates.
325 This may be simply a corruption of the Peshitta.
326 Luke xvi. 29.
328 Or, Surely. The word is omitted by Borg. MS.
a man from the dead go unto them, and they will repent. 2029Abraham said unto him, If they listen neither to Moses nor to the prophets, neither if a man from the dead rose would they believe him.

[27] 2030The kingdom of heaven is like a man that is a householder, which went out early [28] in the morning to hire labourers for his vineyard. 2031And he agreed with the labourers on [29] one penny a day for each labourer, and he sent them into his vineyard. 2032And he went [30] [Arabic, p. 113] out in three hours, and saw others standing in the market idle. 2033He said unto them, Go ye also into my vineyard, and what is right I will pay you. [31] 2034And they went. And he went out also at the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise, [32] and sent them. 2035And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle. He said unto them, Why are ye standing the whole day idle? [33] 2036They said unto him, Because no one hath hired us. He said unto them, Go ye [34] also into the vineyard, and what is right ye shall receive. 2037So when evening came, the lord of the vineyard said unto his steward, Call the labourers, and pay them [35] their wages; and begin with the later ones, and end with the former ones. 2038And [36] those of eleven hours came, and received each a penny. 2039When therefore the first came, they supposed that they should receive something more; and they also [37] received each a penny. 2040And when they received it, they spake angrily against the [38] householder, and said, 2041These last worked one hour, and thou hast made them equal [39] with us, who have suffered the heat of the day, and its burden. 2042He answered and said unto one of them, My friend, I do thee no wrong: was it not for a penny that [40] thou didst bargain with me? 2043Take what is thine, and go thy way; for I wish to [41] give this last as I have given thee. 2044Or am I not entitled to do with what is mine [42] what I choose? 2045Or is thine eye perchance evil, because I am good? Thus shall the last ones be first, and the first last. The called are many, and the chosen are few.

[43] 2046And when Jesus entered into the house of one of the chiefs of the Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, and they were watching him to see what he would [44, 45] do, 2047and there was before him a man which had the dropsy, 2048Jesus answered and [46] said unto the scribes and the

---

341 Matt. xx. 2.
342 Matt. xx. 3.
343 Matt. xx. 4.
344 Matt. xx. 5.
345 Matt. xx. 6.
346 Matt. xx. 7.
347 Matt. xx. 8.
348 Matt. xx. 9.
349 i.e., probably the eleventh hour (cf. § 21, 10).
350 Matt. xx. 10.
351 Matt. xx. 11.
352 Matt. xx. 12.
355 Matt. xx. 15.
356 Lit. my thing.
357 Matt. xx. 16.
360 Luke xiv. 3.
Pharisees, Is it lawful on the sabbath to heal? But [Arabic, p. 114] they were silent. So he took him, and healed him, and sent him away. [47] And he said unto them, Which of you shall have his son or his ox fall on the sabbath day into a well, and not lift him up straightway, and draw water for [48] him? And they were not able to answer him a word to that.

Section XXX.

[1] And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden there, because he saw [2] them choose the places that were in the highest part of the sitting room: When a man invites thee to a feast, do not go and sit at the head of the room; lest there [3] be there a man more honourable than thou, and he that invited you come and say unto thee, Give the place to this man: and thou be ashamed when thou risest and [4] takest another place. But when thou art invited, go and sit last; so that when he that invited thee cometh, he may say unto thee, My friend, go up higher: and [5] thou shalt have praise before all that were invited with thee. For every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and every one that abaseth himself shall be exalted.

[6] And he said also to him that had invited him, When thou makest a feast or a banquet, do not invite thy friends, nor even thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor thy [7] rich neighbours; lest haply they also invite thee, and thou have this reward. But when thou makest a feast, invite the poor, and those with withered hand, and the [8] lame, and the blind: and blessed art thou, since they have not the means to reward [9] thee; that thy reward may be at the rising of the righteous. And when one of them that were invited heard that, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

[10, 11] Jesus answered again in parables, and said, The kingdom of heaven hath been likened [Arabic, p. 115] to a certain king, which made a feast for his son, and prepared a [12] great banquet, and invited many: and he sent his servants at the time of the feast to inform them

---

352 Luke xiv. 5.
357 Lit. at thy rising and taking.
359 Luke xiv. 11.
361 Practically synonymous words.
362 Practically synonymous words.
366 Matt. xxii. 1; Matt. xxii. 2.
368 Borg. ms., is like.
369 Used specially of a marriage feast.
370 Lit. bread, the Syriac word for which (not that in the versions) means also feast.
that were invited. 2071 Everything is made ready for you; come. And [13] they would not come, but began all of them with one voice to make excuse. 2072 And the first said unto them, Say to him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out [14] to see it: 2073 I pray thee to release me, for I ask to be excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to examine them: I pray thee [15] to release me, for I ask to be excused. 2074 And another said, I have married a wife, [16] and therefore I cannot come. 2075 And the king sent also other servants, and said, Say to those that were invited, that my feast is ready, and my oxen and my fatlings are [17] slain, and everything is ready: come to the feast. 2076 But they made light of it, and [18] went, one to his field, and another to his merchandise: 2077 and the rest took his [19] servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them. 2078 And one of the servants [20] came, and informed his lord of what had happened. 2079 And when the king heard, he became angry, and sent his armies; and they destroyed those murderers, and [21] burned their cities. 2080 Then he said to his servants, The feast is prepared, but those [22] that were invited were not worthy. 2081 Go out quickly into the markets and into the partings of the ways of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and those with pains, and the lame, and the blind. And the servants did as the king commanded them. [23] 2082 And they came, and said unto him, Our lord, we have done all that thou commandedst [24] us, and there is here still room. 2083 So the lord said unto his servants, Go out into the roads, and the ways, and the paths, and every one that ye find, invite [25] [Arabic, p. 116] to the feast, and constrain them to enter, till my house is filled. 2084 I say unto you, that no one of those people that were invited shall taste of my feast. [26] 2085 And those servants went out into the roads, and gathered all that they found, good and [27] bad: and the banquet-house was filled with guests. 2086 And the king entered to see those [28] who were seated, and he saw there a man not wearing a festive garment; 2087 and he said unto him, My friend, how didst thou come in here not having on festive garments? [29] 2088 And he was silent. Then the king said to the servants, Bind his hands and his feet, and put him forth into the outer darkness; there shall be weeping and [30] gnashing of teeth. 2089 The called are many; and the chosen, few.

3071 Luke xiv. 17; Matt. xxii. 3b.
3074 Or, omit.
3076 Matt. xxii. 4.
3077 Matt. xxii. 5.
3078 Matt. xxii. 6.
3080 Matt. xxii. 7.
3081 Matt. xxii. 8.
3082 Luke xiv. 21c.
3084 Luke xiv. 23a; Matt. xxii. 9b.
3085 Or, that my house may be.
3087 Matt. xxii. 10.
3088 Matt. xxii. 11.
3089 Matt. xxii. 12.
[31] And after that, the time of the feast of unleavened bread of the Jews arrived, [32] and Jesus went out to go to Jerusalem. 2093 And as he went in the way, there met him [33] ten persons who were lepers, and stood afar off: 2094 and they lifted up their voice, and [34] said, Our Master, Jesus, have mercy upon us. 2095 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and shew yourselves unto the priests. And when they went, they [35] were cleansed. 2096 And one of them, when he saw himself cleansed, returned, and [36] was praising God with a loud voice; 2097 and he fell on his face before the feet of [37] Jesus, giving him thanks: and this man was a Samaritan. 2098 Jesus answered and said, [38] Were not those that were cleansed ten? where then are the nine? 2099 Not one of them turned aside to come and praise God, but this man who is of a strange [39] people. 2100 He said unto him, Arise, and go thy way; for thy faith hath given thee life.2101

[40] And while they were going up in the way to Jerusalem, Jesus went in front of them; and they wondered, and followed him fearing. And he took his twelve disciples apart, [41] and began to tell them privately2103 what was about to befall him. 2104 And he said unto [Arabic, p. 117] them, We are going up to Jerusalem, and all the things shall be fulfilled [42] that are written in the prophets concerning the Son of man. 2105 He shall be delivered to the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, [43] and deliver him to the peoples;2106 and they shall treat him shamefully, and scourge [44] him, and spit in his face, and humble him,2108 and crucify him, and slay him: 2109 and on [45] the third day he shall rise. 2110 But they understood not one thing of this; but this word was hidden from them, and they did not perceive these things that were addressed to them.

[46] Then came near to him the mother of the (two) sons of Zebedee, she and her (two) sons, and worshipped him, and asked of him a certain thing. 2112 And he said [47] unto her, What wouldest thou? 2113 And James and John, her two sons, came forward, and said unto him, Teacher, we would that all that we ask thou wouldest [48] do unto us. 2114 He said unto them,2115 What would ye that I

2092 John v. 1a.
2096 Luke xvii. 15.
2097 Luke xvii. 16.
2101 Or, saved thee.
2102 Mark x. 32.
2103 Lit. between himself and them.
2104 Luke xviii. 31b.
2105 Mark x. 33b.
2106 i.e., Gentiles.
2107 Mark x. 34a.
2108 An obscure expression; perhaps it was originally a repetition of the preceding clause. It might be emended into point at him (the finger of scorn).
2110 Luke xviii. 34.
2111 Matt. xx. 20.
2112 Matt. xx. 21a.
2113 Mark x. 35.
2114 Mark x. 36.
2115 Lit. of course the two of them, and so all through the conversation.
should do unto you? [49] 2116 They said unto him, Grant us that we may sit, the one on thy right, and the other [50] on thy left, in thy kingdom and thy glory. 2117 And Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I am to drink? and with the [51] baptism that I am to be baptized with, will ye be baptized? 2118 And they said unto him, We are able. Jesus said unto them, The cup that I drink ye shall drink; and [52] with the baptism wherewith I am baptized ye shall be baptized: 2119 but that ye should sit on my right and on my left is not mine to give; but it is for him for whom my Father hath prepared it.

Section XXXI.

[1] 2120 And when the ten heard, they were moved with anger against James and John. [2] 2121 And Jesus called them, and said unto them, Ye know that the rulers of the nations [3] are their lords; and their great men are set in authority over them. 2122 Not thus shall it [Arabic, p. 118] be amongst you: but he amongst you that would be great, let him be to you a [4] servant; 2123 and whoever of you would be first, let him be to every man a [5] bond-servant: 2124 even as the Son of man also came not to be served, but to serve, and [6] to give himself a ransom in place of the many. 2125 He said this, and was going about [7] the villages and the cities, and teaching; and he went to Jerusalem. 2126 And a man asked him, Are those that shall be saved few? Jesus answered and said unto [8] them, Strive ye to enter at the narrow door: 2127 I say unto you now, that many shall [9] seek to enter, and shall not be able—2128 from the time when the master of the house riseth, and closeth the door, and ye shall be standing without, and shall knock at the door, and shall begin to say, Our Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and [10] say, I say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: 2129 and ye shall begin to say, [11] Before thee we did eat and drink, and in our markets didst thou teach; 2130 and he shall say unto you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, ye servants [12] of untruth. 2131 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye see Abraham, and Isaac, and...
And when Jesus entered and passed through Jericho, there was a man named Zacchæus, rich, and chief of the publicans. And he desired to see Jesus who he was; and he was not able for the pressure of the crowd, because Zacchæus was little of stature. And he hastened, and went before Jesus, and went up into an unripe fig tree to see Jesus: for he was to pass thus. And when Jesus came to that place, he saw him, and said unto him, Make haste, and come down, Zacchæus: to-day I must be in thy house. And he hastened, and came down, and received him joyfully. And when they all saw, they murmured, and said, He hath gone in and lodged with a man that is a sinner. So Zacchæus stood, and said unto Jesus, My Lord, now half of my possessions I give to the poor, and what I have unjustly taken from every man I give him fourfold. Jesus said unto him, Today is salvation come to this house, because this man also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man came to seek and save the thing that was lost.

And when Jesus went out of Jericho, he and his disciples, there came after him a great multitude. And there was a blind man sitting by the way side begging. And his name was Timæus, the son of Timæus. And he heard the sound of the multitude passing, and asked, Who is this? They said unto him, Jesus the Nazarene. And when he heard that it was Jesus, he called out with a loud voice, and said, Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me. And those that went before Jesus were rebuking him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more, and said, Son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood, and commanded that they should call him. And they called the blind man, and said unto him, Son of David, have mercy on me.
[32] him, Be of good courage, and rise; for, behold, he calleth thee. 2158 And the blind [33] man threw away his garment, and rose, and came to Jesus. 2159 Jesus said unto him, What dost thou wish that I should do unto thee? And that blind man said unto him, My Lord and Master, that my eyes may be opened, so that I may see thee. 2160 [34] [Arabic, p. 120] 2161 And Jesus had compassion on him, and touched his eyes, and said unto [35] him, See; for thy faith hath saved thee. 2162 And immediately he received his sight, and came after him, and praised God; and all the people that saw praised God.

[36] 2163 And he spake a parable because he was nearing Jerusalem, and they supposed [37] that at that time the kingdom of God was about to appear. 2164 He said unto them, A man, a son of a great race, went into a far country, to receive a kingdom, and [38] return. 2165 And he called his ten servants, and gave them ten shares, and said unto [39] them, Trade till the time of my coming. 2166 But the people of his city hated him, and [40] sent messengers after him, and said, We will not that this man reign over us. 2167 And when he had received a kingdom, and returned, he said that the servants to whom he had given the money should be called unto him, that he might know what each [41] of them had traded. 2168 And the first came, and said, My lord, thy share hath gained [42] ten shares. 2169 The king said unto him, Thou good and faithful servant, who hast [43] been found faithful in a little, be thou set over ten districts. 2170 And the second came, [44] and said, My lord, thy portion hath gained five portions. 2171 And he said unto him [45] also, And thou shalt be set over five districts. 2172 And another came, and said, My [46] lord, here is thy portion, which was with me laid by in a napkin: 2173 I feared thee, because thou art a hard man, and takest what thou didst not leave, and seekest [47] what thou didst not give, and reapest what thou didst not sow. 2174 His lord said unto him, From thy mouth shall I judge thee, thou wicked and idle servant, who wast untrustworthy. Thou knewest that I am a hard man, and take what I did not [48] leave, and reap what I did not sow; 2175 why didst thou not put my money at usury, [49] and so I might come and seek it, with its gains? 2176 And he said unto those that were standing in front of him, Take from

---

2158 Mark x. 50.
2159 Mark x. 51.
2161 Matt. xx. 34a.
2163 Lit. saw.
2165 Or, near.
2169 Luke xix. 15.
2170 Doubtless a misinterpretation of the Syriac.
2171 Luke xix. 16.
2177 Luke xix. 22.
him the share, and give it to him that hath [50, 51] [Arabic, p. 121] ten shares. 2180They said unto him, Our lord, he hath ten shares. 2181He said unto them, I say unto you, Every one that hath shall be given unto; and [52] he that hath not, that which he hath also shall be taken from him. 2182And those mine enemies who would not that I should reign over them, bring them, and slay them before me.

Section XXXII.

[1] 2183And when Jesus entered Jerusalem, he went up to the temple of God, and found [2] there oxen and sheep and doves. 2184And when he beheld those that sold and those that bought, and the money-changers sitting, 2185he made for himself a scourge of rope, and drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen, and the money-changers; 2186and he threw down their money, and upset their tables, and the seats of [3] them that sold the doves; 2187and he was teaching, and saying unto them, Is it not written, My house is a house of prayer for all peoples? and ye have made it a den [4] for robbers. 2188And he said unto those that sold the doves, Take this hence, and make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. 2189And he suffered not any [6] one to carry vessels inside the temple. 2190And his disciples remembered the scripture, [7] The zeal of thy house hath eaten me up. 2191The Jews answered and said unto him, [8] What sign hast thou shewn us, that thou dost this? 2192Jesus answered and said unto [9] them, Destroy this temple, and I shall raise it in three days. 2193The Jews said unto him, This temple was built in forty-six years, and wilt thou raise it in three days? [10] 2194But he spake unto them of the temple of his body, that when2195 they destroyed it, he [11] [Arabic, p. 122] would raise it in three days. 2196When therefore he rose from among the dead, his disciples remembered that he said this; and they believed the scriptures, and the word that Jesus spake.

[12] 2197And when Jesus sat down over against the treasury, he observed how the multitudes were casting their offerings into the treasury: and many rich men were [13, 14] throwing in much.

---

282 Luke xix. 27.
283 Matt. xxi. 12a; John ii. 14a.
284 Matt. xxi. 12b.
285 John ii. 14b.
286 Matt. xxi. 12c.
287 Matt. xxi. 13.
288 John ii. 16.
289 Mark xi. 16.
290 John ii. 17.
291 John ii. 18.
292 John ii. 19.
293 John ii. 20.
294 John ii. 21.
295 Or, if.
296 John ii. 22.
297 Mark xii. 41.
And there came a poor widow, and cast in two mites. And Jesus called his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, This poor [15] widow cast into the treasury more than all the people: and all of these cast into the place of the offering of God of the superfluity of their wealth; while this woman of her want threw in all that she possessed.

[16] And he spake unto them this parable, concerning people who trusted in themselves [17] that they are righteous, and despised every man: Two men went up to the [18] temple to pray; one of them a Pharisee, and the other a publican. And the Pharisee stood apart, and prayed thus, O Lord, I thank thee, since I am not like the rest of men, the unjust, the profligate, the extortioners, or even like this publican; [19] but I fast two days a week, and tithe all my possessions. And the publican was [20] standing at a distance, and he would not even lift up his eyes to heaven, but was [21] beating upon his breast, and saying, O Lord, have mercy on me, me the sinner. I say unto you, that this man went down justified to his house more than the Pharisee. Every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and every one that abaseth himself shall be exalted.

And when eventide was come, he left all the people, and went outside the city to Bethany, he and his twelve, and he remained there. And all the people, because they knew the place, came to him, and he received them; and them that [24] had need of healing he healed. And on the morning of the next day, when he returned [25] to the city from Bethany, he hungered. And he saw a fig tree at a distance on the beaten highway, having on it leaves. And he came unto it, expecting to find something on it; and when he came, he found nothing on it but the leaves—it was not [26] the season of figs— and he said unto it, Henceforward for ever let no man eat fruit of thee. And his disciples heard.

And they came to Jerusalem. And there was there a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, ruler of the Jews. This man came unto Jesus by night, and said unto him, My Master, we know that thou hast been sent from God as a teacher; and no man can do these signs that thou

---

298 Mark xii. 42a.
299 Luke xxi. 3.
300 Mark xii. 44a.
301 Lit. house of the offering of God, as in the MS. described by Gildemeister (at Luke xxi. 4); but it is simply a reproduction of the phrase used in the Peshitta at Luke xxi. 3. The parallel passages are a good deal fused together.
304 Luke xviii. 11.
305 Lit. between him and himself.
307 Or, gains.
310 Mark xi. 19a; Matt. xxi. 17.
311 Luke ix. 11.
312 Mark xi. 12.
313 Mark xi. 13.
314 Lit. one (Syriac).
315 Lit. and it.
316 Mark xi. 14.
317 Mark xi. 15a; John iii. 1.
318 John iii. 2.
doest, except him whom God is [29] with. 2219Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, If a man [30] be not born a second time, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 2220Nicodemus said unto him, How can a man who is old be born? can he, think you, return again to [31] his mother’s womb a second time, to enter and be born? 2221Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, If a man be not born of water and the Spirit, [32] he cannot enter the kingdom of God. 2222For he that is born of flesh is flesh; and he that [33] is born of Spirit is spirit. 2223Wonder not that I said unto thee that ye must be born a [34] [Arabic, p. 124] second time. 2224The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest its voice, but thou knowest not from what place it cometh, nor whither it goeth: so [35] is every man that is born of the Spirit. 2225Nicodemus answered and said unto him, [36] How can that be? 2226Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou teaching Israel, [37] and yet knowest not these things? 2228Verily, verily, I say unto thee, What we know [38] we say, and what we have seen we witness: and ye receive not our witness. 2229If I said unto you what is on earth, and ye believed not, how then, if I say unto you [39] what is in heaven, will ye believe? 2230And no man hath ascended up into heaven, except him that descended from heaven, the Son of man, which is in heaven. [40] 2231And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so is the Son of man to be [41] lifted up: 2232so that every man who may believe in him may not perish, but have [42] eternal life. 2233God so loved the world, that2234 he should give his only Son; and so every one that believeth on him should not perish, but should have eternal life. [43] 2235God sent not his Son into the world to judge the world; but that the world might [44] be saved by his hand. 2236He that believeth in him shall not be judged: but he that believeth not is condemned beforehand, because he hath not believed in the name [45] of the only Son, the Son of God.2237 2238This is the judgement, that the light came into the world, and men loved the darkness more than the light; because their deeds [46] were evil. 2239Whosoever doeth evil deeds hateth the light, and cometh not to the [47] light, lest his deeds be reproved. 2240But he that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be known, that they have been done in God.

2219 John iii. 3.
2220 John iii. 4.
2221 John iii. 5.
2222 John iii. 6.
2223 John iii. 7.
2224 John iii. 8.
2225 John iii. 9.
2226 John iii. 10.
2227 Or the teacher of.
2228 John iii. 11.
2229 John iii. 12.
2230 John iii. 13.
2231 John iii. 14.
2232 John iii. 15.
2233 John iii. 16.
2234 The Arabic particle means in order that. Perhaps it is a clerical error for so that; or it may be meant to represent the Syriac.
2235 John iii. 17.
2236 John iii. 18.
2237 The translator has followed too closely the order of words in his Syriac original, which agrees with the Text. Rec.
2238 John iii. 19.
2239 John iii. 20.
2240 John iii. 21.
Section XXXIII.

[1] [Arabic, p. 125]. And when evening came, Jesus went forth outside of the city, he and his [2] disciples. 2242And as they passed in the morning, the disciples saw that fig tree [3] withered away from its root. 2243And they passed by, and said, How did the fig tree dry [4] up immediately? 2244And Simon remembered, and said unto him, My Master, behold, [5] that fig tree which thou didst curse hath dried up. 2245And Jesus answered and said [6] unto them, Let there be in you the faith of God. 2246Verily I say unto you, if ye believe, and doubt not in your hearts, and assure yourselves that that will be which [7] ye say, ye shall have what ye say. 2247And if ye say to this mountain, Remove, and [8] fall2248 into the sea, it shall be. 2249And all that ye ask God in prayer, and believe, he [9, 10] will give you. 2250And the apostles2251 said unto our Lord, Increase our faith. 2252He said unto them, If there be in you faith like a grain of mustard, ye shall say to this fig tree, Be thou torn up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it will obey you.  [11] 2253Who of you hath a servant driving a yoke of oxen or tending sheep, and if he [12] come from the field, will say unto him straightway, Go and sit down? 2254Nay, 2255 he will say unto him, Make ready for me wherewith I may sup, and gird thy waist, and serve me, till I eat and drink; and afterwards thou shalt eat and drink also.  [13] 2256Doth that servant haply, who did what he was bid, receive his praise? I think [14] not. 2257So ye also, when ye have done all that ye were bid, say, We are idle servants; what it was our duty to do, we have done.

[15] 2258For this reason I say unto you, Whatever ye pray and ask, believe that ye [16] [Arabic, p. 126] receive, and ye shall have. 2259And when ye stand to pray, forgive what is in your heart against any man; and your Father which is in heaven will [17] forgive you also your wrong-doings. 2260But if ye forgive not men their wrong-doings, neither will your Father forgive you also your wrong-doings.

2241 Mark xi. 19.
2242 Mark xi. 20.
2243 Matt. xxi. 20b.
2244 Mark xi. 21.
2245 Mark xi. 22.
2246 Mark xi. 23.
2247 Matt. xxi. 21b.
2248 Syr.
2249 Matt. xxi. 22.
2250 Luke xvii. 5.
2251 The Syriac word.
2252 Lit. Increase us in.
2254 Luke xvii. 7.
2256 Or, But.
2258 Luke xvi. 10.
2259 Mark xi. 24.
2260 Mark xi. 25.
2261 Mark xi. 26.
[18] And he spake unto them a parable also, that they should pray at all times, and [19] not be slothful: There was a judge in a city, who feared not God, nor was ashamed [20] for men:

and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, and said, [21] Avenge me of mine adversary.

And he would not for a long time: but afterwards he said within himself, If of God

I have no fear, and before men I have no shame; [22] yet because this widow vexeth me, I will avenge her, that she come not at all times [23, 24] and annoy me. [2267] And our Lord said, Hear ye what the judge of injustice said. [2268] And shall not God still more do vengeance for his elect, who call upon him in the night [25] and in the day, and grant them respite? [2269] I say unto you, He will do vengeance for them speedily. Thinkest thou the Son of man will come and find faith on the earth?

[26, 27] And they came again to Jerusalem. [2270] And it came to pass, on one of the days, as Jesus was walking in the temple, and teaching the people, and preaching the gospel, that the chief priests and the scribes with the elders came upon him, and said unto him, Tell us: By what power doest thou this? and who gave thee this power to do that? [2274] And Jesus said unto them, I also will ask you one word, and if [30] ye tell me, I also shall tell you by what power I do that. [2275] The baptism of John, from what place is it? from heaven or of men? [2276] Tell me.

And they reflected within themselves, [Arabic, p. 127] and said, If we shall say unto him, From heaven; he will say unto [32] us, For what reason did ye not believe him? [2278] But if we shall say, Of men; [33] we fear that the people will stone us, all of them. [2281] And all of them were holding [34] to John, that he was a true prophet. [2283] They answered and said unto him, We know [35] not. Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you also by what power I work. What think ye? A man had two sons; and he went to the first, and said unto him, My [36] son, go to-day, and till in the vineyard. [2285] And he answered and said, I do not wish [37] to: but finally he repented, and went. [2286] And he

---

2263 Luke xviii. 2.
2264 Luke xviii. 3.
2265 Luke xviii. 4.
2266 Luke xviii. 5.
2268 Luke xviii. 7.
2270 Mark xi. 15a.
2273 Mark xi. 28b.
2274 Mark xi. 29a; Matt. xxi. 24b.
2275 Matt. xxi. 25a.
2276 Mark xi. 30b.
2277 Matt. xxi. 25b.
2278 Matt. xxi. 26a.
2279 Verse 26 begins here in the Greek.
2280 From Mark.
2281 Luke xx. 6b; Mark xi. 32b.
2282 cf. Syriac.
2283 Mark xi. 33.
2284 Matt. xxi. 28.
2285 Matt. xxi. 29.
2286 Matt. xxi. 30.
went to the other, and said unto [38] him likewise. 2287 And he answered and said, Yea, my lord: and went not. Which of these two did the will of his father? They said unto him, The first. Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, The publicans and harlots go before you into [39] the kingdom of God. 2288 John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and harlots believed him; and ye, not even when ye saw, did ye repent at last, that ye might believe in him.

[40] 2289 Hear another parable: A man was a householder, and planted a vineyard, and surrounded it with a hedge, and digged in it a winepress, and built in it a tower, [41, 42] 2290 and gave it to husbandmen, and went to a distance for a long time. 2291 So when the time of the fruits came, he sent his servants2292 unto the husbandmen, that they might [43] send him of the produce2293 of his vineyard. 2294 And those husbandmen beat him, and [44] sent him away empty. 2295 And he sent unto them another servant also; and they [45] stoned him, and wounded2296 him, and sent him away with shameful handling. 2297 And he sent again another; and they slew him. And he sent many other servants unto [46] them. 2298 And the husbandmen took his servants, and one they beat, and another they [47] stoned, and another they slew. 2299 So he sent again other servants more than the first; and [48] [Arabic, p. 128] they did likewise with them. 2300 So the owner of the vineyard said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will see him and be [49, 50] ashamed. 2301 So at last he sent unto them his beloved son that he had. 2302 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said amongst themselves, This is the heir. [51, 52] 2303 And they said, We will slay him, and so the inheritance will be ours. 2304 So they took [53] him, and put him forth without the vineyard, and slew him. 2305 When then the lord [54] of the vineyard shall come, what will he do with those husbandmen? 2306 They said unto him, He will destroy them in the worst of ways, and give the vineyard to [55] other husbandmen, who will give him fruit in its season. 2308 Jesus said unto them, Have ye never read in the scripture,

The stone which the builders declared to be base,

---

2287 Matt. xxi. 31.
2288 Matt. xxi. 32.
2289 Matt. xxi. 33a.
2290 Luke xx. 9b.
2291 Mark xxi. 34.
2292 The difference between singular and plural is very slight in Arabic.
2293 Lit. property.
2294 Mark xii. 3b.
2295 Mark xii. 4.
2296 A word used specially of wounding the head.
2297 Mark xii. 5a.
2298 Matt. xxi. 35.
2299 Matt. xxi. 36.
2301 Mark xii. 6a.
2302 Matt. xxi. 38a.
2304 Matt. xxi. 39.
2305 Matt. xxi. 40.
2306 Matt. xxi. 41.
2307 cf. Syriac versions.
2308 Matt. xxi. 42a.
The same came to be at the head of the corner:

[56] From God was this,
And it is wonderful in our eyes?

[57] Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and [58] given to a people that will produce fruit. [59] And whosoever falleth on this stone shall be broken in pieces: but on whomsoever it falleth, it will grind him to powder. [60] And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that it was concerning them he spake. [61] And they sought to seize him; and they feared the multitude, because they were holding to him as the prophet.

Section XXXIV.


---

2310 Matt. xxi. 42c.
2311 Matt. xxi. 43.
2312 Matt. xxi. 44.
2313 Matt. xxi. 45.
2314 Matt. xxi. 46.
2316 Vat. ms. omits the power. We should then translate (with Pesh. and Sin.) unto judgement.
2317 Matt. xxi. 16.
2318 See note, § 3, 53.
2319 Possibly this is the meaning of the Arabic phrase, which occurs also in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (Brit. Mus. text).
2320 Matt. xxi. 17.
2321 Mark xii. 15a.
2322 Matt. xxi. 18b; Matt. xxi. 19.
2323 Matt. xxi. 20.
2324 Matt. xxi. 21.
And on that day came the Sadducees, and said unto him, There is no life for the dead. And they asked him, and said unto him, Teacher, Moses said unto us, If a man die, not having children, let his brother take his wife, and raise up seed for his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children; and the second took his wife, and died without children; and the third also took her; and in like manner the seven of them also, and they died without leaving children. And last of them all the woman died also. At the resurrection, then, which of these seven shall have this woman? for all of them took her. Jesus answered and said unto them, Is it not for this that ye have erred, because ye know not the scriptures, nor the power of God? And the sons of this world take wives, and the women become the men’s; but those that have become worthy of that world, and the resurrection from among the dead, do not die; but they are like the angels, and are the children of God, because they have become the children of the resurrection. For in the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read in the book of Moses, how from the bush God said unto him, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? And God is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all of them are alive with him. And ye have erred greatly.

And when the multitudes heard, they were wondering at his teaching. And some of the scribes answered and said unto him, Teacher, thou hast well said. But the rest of the Pharisees, when they saw his silencing the Sadducees on this point, gathered against him to contend with him.

And one of the scribes, of those that knew the law, when he saw the excellence of his answer to them, desired to try him, and said unto him, What shall I do to inherit eternal life?
and, Which of the commandments is greater, and has precedence [27] in the law? 2351 Jesus said unto him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O [28] Israel; The Lord our God, the Lord is one: 2352 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy thought, and with all thy [29, 30] strength. 2353 This is the great and pre-eminent 2354 commandment. 2355 And the second, which is like it, is, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

And another commandment [31] greater than these two there is not. 2356 On these two commandments, then, are hung the [32] [Arabic, p. 131] law and the prophets. 2357 That scribe said unto him, Excellent! my Master; 2358 thou hast said truly that he is one, and there is no other outside of him: [33] 2359 and that a man should love him with all his heart, and with all his thought, and with all his soul, and with all his strength, and that he should love his neighbour as [34] himself, is better than all savours and sacrifices. 2360 And Jesus saw him that he had answered wisely; and he answered and said unto him, Thou art not far from the [35, 36] kingdom of God. 2361 Thou hast spoken rightly: do this, and thou shalt live. 2362 And he, as his desire was to justify himself, said unto him, And who is my neighbour? [37] 2363 Jesus said unto him, A man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and the robbers fell upon him, and stripped him, and beat him, his life remaining in him 2364 and went away. 2365 And it happened that there came down a certain priest that way; [39] and he saw him, and passed by. 2366 And likewise a Levite also came and reached [40] that place, and saw him, and passed by. 2367 And a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, [41] came to the place where he was, and saw him, and had compassion on him, 2368 and came near, and bound up his wounds, 2369 and poured on them wine and oil; and he set him on the ass, and brought him to the inn, and expended his care upon him. 2370 And on the morrow of that day he took out two pence,
and gave them to the innkeeper, and said unto him, Care for him; and if thou spendest upon him more, [43] when I return, I shall give thee. 2374Who of these three now, thinkest thou, is nearest [44] to him that fell among the robbers? 2375And he said unto him, He that had compassion [45] [Arabic, p. 132] on him. 2376Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou also likewise. And no man dared afterwards to ask him anything.

[46] 2377And he was teaching every day in the temple. But the chief priests and scribes and the elders of the people sought to destroy him; 2378and they could not find what [47] they should do with him; and all the people were hanging upon him to hear him. 2379And many of the multitude believed on him, and said, The Messiah, when he [49] cometh, can it be that he will do more than these signs that this man doeth? 2380And the Pharisees heard the multitudes say that of him; and the chief priests sent [50] officers to seize him. 2381And Jesus said unto them, I am with you but a short time [51] yet, and I go to him that sent me. 2382And ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: [52] and where I shall be, ye shall not be able to come. 2383The Jews said within themselves, Whither hath this man determined to go that we shall not be able to find him? can it be that he is determined to go to the regions of the nations, [2384] and teach [53] the heathen? 2385What is this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come?

Section XXXV.

[1] 2386And on the great day, which is the last of the feast, Jesus stood, crying out and [2] saying, If any man is thirsty, let him come unto me, and drink. 2387Every one that believeth in me, as the scriptures said, there shall flow from his belly rivers of pure [3] water. 2388He said that referring to the Spirit, which those who believed in him were to receive: for the Spirit was not yet granted; and because Jesus had not yet been [4] [Arabic, p. 133] glorified. 2389And many of the multitude that heard his words said, This is [5] in truth the prophet. 2390And others said, This is the Messiah. But

2374 Luke x. 36.
2375 Luke x. 37.
2376 Mark xii. 34b.
2377 Luke xix. 47.
2379 In Syriac could and found are represented by the same word. The Arabic translator has chosen the wrong one.
2380 John vii. 31.
2381 John vii. 32.
2382 See note, § 11, 11.
2383 John vii. 33.
2384 John vii. 34.
2385 John vii. 35.
2386 See note above, on § 34, 46.
2387 i.e., Gentiles.
2388 John vii. 36.
2389 John vii. 37.
2390 John vii. 38.
2391 John vii. 39.
2392 John vii. 40.
2393 John vii. 41.
others [6] said, Can it be that the Messiah will come from Galilee? 2394 Hath not the scripture said that from the seed of David, and from Bethlehem, the village of David, the [7] Messiah cometh? 2395 And there occurred a dissension in the multitude because of him. 2396 And some of them were wishing to seize him; but no man laid a hand upon him.

[9] 2397 And those officers came to the chief priests and Pharisees: and the priests said [10] unto them, Why did ye not bring him? 2398 The officers said, Never spake man thus [11] as speaketh this man. 2399 The Pharisees said unto them, Perhaps ye also have gone [12, 13] astray? 2400 Hath any of the rulers or the Pharisees haply believed in him? 2401 except [14] this people which knows not the law; they are accursed. 2402 Nicodemus, one of them, [15] he that had come to Jesus by night, 2403 said unto them, Doth our law haply condemn [16] a man, except it hear him first and know what he hath done? 2404 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also haply from Galilee? Search, and see that a prophet riseth not from Galilee.

[17, 18] 2405 And when the Pharisees assembled, Jesus asked them, and said, 2406 What say ye of [19] the Messiah? whose son is he? They said unto him, The son of David. 2407 He said unto them, And how doth David in the Holy Spirit call him Lord? for he said,

[20] 2408 The Lord said unto my Lord,

  Sit on my right hand,

  That I may put thine enemies under thy feet.

[21, 22] 2409 If then David calleth him Lord, how is he his son? 2410 And no one was able to answer him; and no man dared from that day again to ask him of anything.

[23] 2411 And Jesus addressed them again, and said, I am the light of the world; and he that [24] followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall find the light of life. 2412 The Pharisees [Arabic, p. 134] said unto him, Thou bearest witness to thyself; thy witness is not true. 2413 Jesus [25] answered and said unto them, If I bear witness to myself, my witness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye know not whence I came, or [26, 27] whither I go. 2414 And ye judge after the

---

2394 John vii. 42.
2395 John vii. 43.
2396 John vii. 44.
2397 John vii. 45.
2398 John vii. 46.
2399 John vii. 47.
2400 John vii. 48.
2401 John vii. 49.
2402 John vii. 50.
2403 John vii. 51.
2404 John vii. 52.
2405 Matt. xxiii. 41.
2406 Matt. xxiii. 42.
2407 Matt. xxiii. 43.
2408 Matt. xxiii. 44.
2409 Matt. xxiii. 45.
2410 Matt. xxiii. 46.
2411 John viii. 12.
2412 John viii. 13.
2414 John viii. 15.
flesh; and I judge no man. 2415 And even if I judge, my judgement is true; because I am not alone, but I and my Father which [28, 29] sent me. 2416 And in your law it is written, that the witness of two men is true. 2417 I am he that beareth witness to myself, and my Father which sent me beareth witness to [30] me. 2418 They said unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye know not me, nor my Father: for did ye know me, ye would know my [31] Father. 2419 He said these sayings in the treasury, where he was teaching in the [32] temple: 2420 and no man seized him; because his hour had not yet come. Jesus said unto them again, I go truly, and ye shall seek me and not find me, and ye shall die [33] in your sins: and where I go, ye cannot come. 2421 The Jews said, Will he haply kill [34] himself, that he saith, Where I go, ye cannot come? 2422 He said unto them, Ye are from below; and I am from above: ye are of this world; and I am not of this [35] world. 2423 I said unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: if ye believe not that I am [36] he, ye shall die in your sins. 2424 The Jews said, And thou, who art thou? Jesus said [37] unto them, If I should begin to speak unto you, 2425 I have concerning you many words and judgement: but he that sent me is true; and I, what I heard from him is what [38, 39] I say in the world. 2426 And they knew not that he meant by that the Father. 2427 Jesus [Arabic, p. 135] said unto them again, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then ye shall know that I am he: and I do nothing of myself, but as my Father [40] taught me, so I speak. 2428 And he that sent me is with me; and my Father hath not [41] left me alone; because I do what is pleasing to him at all times. 2429 And while he was saying that, many believed in him.

[42] 2430 And Jesus said to those Jews that believed in him, If ye abide in my words, truly [43] ye are my disciples; 2431 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. [44] 2432 They said unto him, We are the seed of Abraham, and have never served any man [45] in the way of slavery: how then sayest thou, Ye shall be free children? 2433 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that doeth a sin is a slave of [46] sin. 2434 And the slave doth not remain for ever in the house; but the son remaineth [47, 48] for ever. 2435 And if the Son set you free, truly ye shall be free children. I know that ye are the seed of Abraham; but ye seek to slay me, because

2415 John viii. 16.
2416 John viii. 17.
2417 John viii. 18.
2418 John viii. 19.
2419 John viii. 20.
2420 John viii. 21.
2421 John viii. 22.
2422 John viii. 23.
2423 John viii. 24.
2424 John viii. 25.
2426 John viii. 27.
2427 John viii. 28.
2428 John viii. 29.
2429 John viii. 30.
2430 John viii. 31.
2431 John viii. 32.
2432 John viii. 33.
2433 John viii. 34.
2434 John viii. 35.
2435 John viii. 37.
ye are unable for my [49] word. 2436 And what I saw with my Father, I say: and what ye saw with your father, [50] ye do. 2437 They answered and said unto him, Our father is Abraham. Jesus said unto them, If ye were the children of Abraham, ye would do the deeds of Abraham. [51] 2438 Now, behold, ye seek to kill me, a man that speaketh with you the truth, that I [52] heard from God: this did Abraham not do. 2441 And ye do the deeds of your father. They said unto him, We were not born of fornication; 2442 we have one Father, who is [53] God. 2443 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: I proceeded and came from God; and it was not of my own self that I came, 2445 but he sent [54] [Arabic, p. 136] me. 2446 Why then do ye not know my word? Because ye cannot hear my word. [55] 2447 Ye are from the father, the devil, 2448 and the lust of your father do ye desire to do, who from the beginning is a slayer of men, and in the truth standeth not, because the truth is not in him. And when he speaketh untruth, he speaketh from [56] himself: for he is a liar, and the father of untruth. 2449 And I who speak the truth, ye [57] believe me not. 2450 Who of you rebuketh me for a sin? And if I speak the truth, ye [58] do not believe me. 2451 2452 Whosoever is of God heareth the words of God: therefore do [59] ye not hear, because ye are not of God. 2453 The Jews answered and said unto him, [60] Did we not say well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast demons? 2454 Jesus said unto them, As for me, I have not a devil; but my Father do I honour, and ye dishonour [61] me. 2455 I seek not my glory: here is one who seeketh and judgeth.

Section XXXVI.

[1] 2456 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever keepeth my word shall not see death [2] for ever. 2457 The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast demons. Abraham is dead, and the

2436 John viii. 38.
2437 John viii. 39.
2438 John viii. 40.
2439 Lit. speaketh, according to Arabic idiom.
2440 Borg. ms. omits with you.
2441 John viii. 41.
2442 Borg. ms. has an adulteress, mistaking the less common Arabic word for a clerical error.
2443 John viii. 42.
2444 Different words are used in the Arabic; so in the Greek, but not in the Peshitta. Sin. and Cur. are wanting.
2445 Different words are used in the Arabic; so in the Greek, but not in the Peshitta. Sin. and Cur. are wanting.
2446 John viii. 43.
2447 John viii. 44.
2448 Lit. backbiter.
2449 John viii. 45.
2450 John viii. 46.
2451 This is probably simply a clerical error for the ordinary reading, why have ye not believed me? The Arabic words why and not having the same consonants, one of them was purposely or accidentally omitted by a copyist.
2452 John viii. 47.
2453 John viii. 48.
2454 John viii. 49.
2455 John viii. 50.
2456 John viii. 51.
2457 John viii. 52.
prophets; and thou sayest, Whosoever keepeth my word shall not [3] taste death for ever. 2458 Art thou haply greater than our father Abraham, who is [4] dead, and than the prophets, which are dead? whom makest thou thyself? 2459 Jesus said unto them, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: my Father is he that [5] glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is our[2460] God; 2461 and yet ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say that I know him not, I should become [6] [Arabic, p. 137] a liar like you: but I know him, and keep his word. 2462 Abraham your father [7] longed to see my day; and he saw, and rejoiced. 2463 The Jews said unto him, [8] Thou art now not fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 2464 Jesus said unto [9] them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am. 2465 And they take[2466] stones to stone him: 2467 but Jesus concealed himself, and went out of the temple. And he passed through them, and went his way.

[10] 2468 And as he passed, he saw a man blind from his mother’s womb. 2469 And his [11] disciples asked him, and said, Our Master, who sinned, this man, or his parents, so [12] that he was born blind?2470 2471 Jesus said unto them, Neither did he sin, nor his parents: [13] but that the works of God may be seen in him.2472 2473 It is incumbent on me to do the deeds of him that sent me, while it is day: a night will come, and no man will be [14] able to busy himself. 2474 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. [15] 2475 And when he said that, he spat upon the ground, and made clay of his spittle, and [16] smeared it on the eyes of the blind man, and said unto him, 2476 Go and wash thyself in [17] the pool2477 of Siloam. 2478 2479 And he went and washed, and came seeing. And his neighbours, which saw him of old begging, said, Is not this he that was sitting begging? [18] 2480 And some said, It is he; and others said, Nay, but he resembles him much. He [19, 20] said, I am he. 2481 They said unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 2482 He answered and said unto

2458 John viii. 53.
2459 John viii. 54.
2460 cf. Peshitta. The Sinaitic omits our.
2461 John viii. 55.
2462 John viii. 56.
2463 John viii. 57.
2464 John viii. 58.
2465 John viii. 59.
2466 The Vat. ms. has took him, probably omitting stones, though Ciasca does not say so. Take is probably a copyist’s error (change in diacritical paints) for took.
2467 John viii. 60 [reckoned to verse 59 in the Greek.].
2468 John ix. 1.
2469 John ix. 2.
2470 A different word in Arabic from that used in verses 1 and 6.
2471 John ix. 3.
2472 The Vat. ms. has that we may see the works of God in him. By the addition of a diacritical point this would give the same sense as in the text above, and more grammatically.
2473 John ix. 4.
2474 John ix. 5.
2475 John ix. 6.
2476 John ix. 7.
2477 The Arabic word properly means baptism. The Syriac has both meanings.
2478 Lit. Shiloha, as in Syriac.
2479 John ix. 8.
2480 John ix. 9.
2481 John ix. 10.
2482 John ix. 11.
them, A man named Jesus made clay, and smeared it on my eyes, and said unto me, Go and wash in the water of Siloam: and I went and [21] washed, and received sight. 2483 2484 They said unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not. [22, 23] [Arabic, p. 138] 2485 And they brought him that was previously blind to the Pharisees. 2486 And the day in which Jesus made clay and opened with it his eyes was a sabbath [24] day. 2487 And again the Pharisees asked him, How didst thou receive sight? And he said [25] unto them, He put clay on mine eyes, and I washed, and received sight. 2488 The people 2489 of the Pharisees said, This man is not from God, for he keepeth not the sabbath. And others said, How can a man that is a sinner do these signs? And there came [26] to be a division amongst them. 2490 And again they said to that blind man, Thou, then, what sayest thou of him that opened for thee thine eyes? He said unto them, [27] I say that he is a prophet. 2491 And the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he was blind, and received sight, until they summoned the parents of him who received [28] sight, and asked them, 2492 Is this your son, of whom ye said that he was born blind? [29] how then, behold, doth he now see? 2493 His parents answered and said, We know [30] that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 2494 but how he has come to see now, or who it is that opened his eyes, we know not: and he also has reached his prime; [31] ask him, and he will speak for himself. 2495 This said his parents, because they were fearing the Jews: and the Jews decided, that if any man should confess of him that [32] he was the Messiah, they would put him out of the synagogue. 2496 For this reason [33] said his parents, He hath reached his prime; ask him. 2497 And they called the man a second time, him that was blind, and said unto him, Praise God: we know that this [34] man is a sinner. 2498 He answered and said unto them, Whether he be a sinner, I know [35] not: I know one thing, that I was blind, and I now see. 2499 They said unto him again. [36] [Arabic, p. 139] What did he unto thee? how opened he for thee thine eyes? 2500 He said unto them, I said unto you, and ye did not hear: what wish ye further to hear? [37] ye also, do ye wish to become disciples to him? 2501 And they reviled him, and said unto him, Thou art the disciple of that man; but as for us, we are the disciples of [38] Moses. 2502 And we know that

2483 Lit. saw.
2484 John ix. 12.
2485 John ix. 13.
2486 John ix. 14.
2487 John ix. 15.
2488 John ix. 16.
2489 An easy clerical error for Some.
2490 John ix. 17.
2491 John ix. 18.
2492 John ix. 19.
2493 Lit. them, whether this be.
2494 John ix. 20.
2495 John ix. 21.
2496 John ix. 22.
2497 John ix. 23.
2498 John ix. 24.
2499 John ix. 25.
2501 John ix. 27.
2502 Or, why (cf. note, § 7, 38).
2503 John ix. 28.
2504 Disciples is probably simply a misprint in Ciasca’s text.
2505 John ix. 29.
God spake unto Moses: but this man, we know not [39] whence he is.  

The man answered and said unto them, From this is the wonder, [40] because ye know not whence he is, and mine eyes hath he opened.  

And we know that God heareth not the voice of sinners: but whosoever feareth him, and doeth [41] his will, him he heareth.  

From eternity hath it not been heard of, that a man [42] opened the eyes of a blind man, who had been born in blindness.  

If then this man [43] were not from God, he could not do that.  

They answered and said unto him, Thou wast all of thee born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they put him forth without.  

[44] And Jesus heard of his being put forth without, and found him, and said unto [45] him, Dost thou believe in the Son of God?  

He that was made whole answered [46] and said, Who is he, my Lord, that I may believe in him?  

Jesus said unto him, [47] Thou hast seen him, and he that speaketh to thee is he.  

And he said, I believe, my Lord. And he fell down worshipping him.

Section XXXVII.

[1] And Jesus said, To judge the world am I come, so that they that see not may [2] see, and they that see may become blind.  

And some of the Pharisees which were [3] with him heard that, and they said unto him, Can it be that we are blind?  

Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should not have sin: but now ye say, We see: and because of this your sin remaineth.  

[4] [Arabic, p. 140] Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever entereth not into the fold of the sheep by the door, but goeth up from another place, that man is a thief and a [5, 6] stealer.  

But he that entereth by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.  

And therefore the keeper of the door openeth for him the door; and the sheep hear his voice: and [7] he calleth his sheep by their names, and they go forth unto him.  

And when he putteth forth his sheep, he goeth before
them, and his sheep follow him: because [8] they know his voice. 2526 And after a stranger will the sheep not go, but they flee from [9] him: because they hear not the voice of a stranger. 2527 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they knew not what he was saying unto them.

[10] 2528 Jesus said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the [11] sheep. 2529 And all that came are thieves and stealers: but the sheep heard them not. 2530 I am the door: and if a man enter by me, he shall live, and shall go in and go out, [13] and shall find pasture. 2531 And the stealer cometh not, save that he may steal, and kill, and destroy: but I came that they might have life, and that they might have [14] the thing that is better. 2532 2533 I am the good shepherd; and the good shepherd giveth [15] himself for his sheep. 2534 But the hireling, who is not a shepherd, and whose the sheep are not, when he seeth the wolf as it cometh, leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, [16] and the wolf cometh, and snatcheth away the sheep, and scattereth them: 2535 and the [17] hireling fleeth because he is an hireling, and hath no care for the sheep. 2536 I am the [18] good shepherd; 2537 and I know what is mine, and what is mine knoweth me, as my Father knoweth me, and I know my Father; and I give myself for the sheep. 2538 And I have other sheep also, that are not of this flock: them also I must invite, and they shall hear my voice; and all the sheep shall be one, and the shepherd one. [20] [Arabic, p. 141] 2539 And therefore doth my Father love me, because I give my life, that I may [21] take it again. 2540 No man taketh it from me, but I leave it of my own choice. And I have the right to leave it, and have the right also to take it. And this commandment did I receive of my Father.

[22] 2541 And there occurred a disagreement among the Jews because of these sayings. 2542 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is afflicted with madness; why listen [24] ye to him? 2543 And others said, These sayings are not those of men possessed with demons. Can a demon haply open the eyes of a blind man?

2525 A different word (lit. rams) from that used in the other verses; so in Peshitta (cf. Sin., which, however, differs somewhat); cf. also § 54, 40 f., note.
2526 John x. 5.
2527 John x. 6.
2528 John x. 7.
2529 John x. 8.
2530 John x. 9.
2531 John x. 10.
2532 Or, best thing. Vat. ms. omits from but I came.
2533 John x. 11.
2534 Or, his life.
2535 John x. 12.
2536 cf. note to § 37, 6.
2537 Or, to snatch...and scatter.
2538 John x. 13.
2539 John x. 14.
2540 John x. 15.
2541 Or, my life.
2542 John x. 16.
2543 John x. 17.
2544 John x. 18.
2545 John x. 19.
2546 John x. 20.
2547 Lit. epilepsy.
2548 John x. 21.
And the feast of the dedication came on at Jerusalem: and it was winter. Then Jesus was walking in the temple in the porch of Solomon. The Jews therefore surrounded him, and said unto him, Until when dost thou make our hearts anxious? [28] If thou art the Messiah, tell us plainly. He answered and said unto them, I told you, and ye believe not: and the deeds that I do in my Father’s name bear witness [29, 30] to me. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. [31] And my sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they come after me: and I give them eternal life; and they shall not perish for ever, nor shall any man snatch [32] them out of my hands. For the Father, who hath given them unto me, is greater [33] than all; and no man is able to take [34] them, nor shall any man snatch [32] them out of my hands.

I and [34, 35] my Father are one. And the Jews took stones to stone him. Jesus said unto them, Many good deeds from my Father have I shewed you; because of which ye believe me not. I do not the deeds of my Father, ye believe me not. Is it not thus written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? [38] [Arabic, p. 142] And if he called those gods—for to them came the word of God (and it is [39] not possible in the scripture that anything should be undone)—he then, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, do ye say that he blasphemeth; [40] because I said unto you, I am the Son of God? If then I do not the deeds of my Father, ye believe me not. But if I do, even if ye believe not me, believe the deeds: that ye may know and believe that my Father is in me, and I in my Father. [42] And they sought again to take him: and he went forth out of their hands.

---

2549 John x. 22.
2550 John x. 23.
2551 John x. 24.
2552 John x. 25.
2553 John x. 26.
2554 John x. 27.
2555 John x. 28.
2556 Or, hand; but probably dual (cf. Syr.).
2557 cf. § 37, 6.
2558 John x. 29.
2559 cf. § 37, 6.
2560 cf. Peshitta.
2561 John x. 30.
2562 John x. 31.
2563 John x. 32.
2564 Lit. which deed.
2565 cf. Peshitta.
2566 This in could more easily arise as a clerical error (repetition) in the Syriac text.
2567 cf. Peshitta.
2568 cf. Peshitta.
2569 This in could more easily arise as a clerical error (repetition) in the Syriac text.
2570 John x. 33.
2571 John x. 34.
2572 John x. 35.
2573 John x. 36.
2574 John x. 37.
2575 John x. 38.
2576 John x. 39.
And he went beyond Jordan to the place where John was baptizing formerly; [44] and abode there. 2576 And many people came unto him; and they said, John did not [45] work even one sign: but all that John said of this man is truth. 2577 And many believed in him.

[46] 2578 And there was a sick man, named Lazarus, of the village of Bethany, the brother [47] of Mary and Martha. 2579 And Mary was she that anointed with sweet ointment the feet of Jesus, and wiped them with her hair; and Lazarus, who was sick, was the [48] brother of this woman. 2580 And his sisters sent unto Jesus, and said unto him, Our [49] Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. 2581 But Jesus said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glorifying of God, that the Son of God may be glorified [50, 51] because of it. 2582 And Jesus loved Martha, and Mary, and Lazarus. 2583 And when he [52] heard that he was sick, he abode in the place where he was two days. 2584 And after that, [53] he said unto his disciples, Come, let us go into Judæa. 2585 His disciples said unto him, Our [Arabic, p. 143] Master, now the Jews desire to stone thee; and goest thou again thither? [54, 55] 2586 Jesus said unto them, Is not the day of twelve hours? If then a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of the world. 2587 But if [56] a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no lamp in him. 2588 This said Jesus: and after that, he said unto them, Lazarus our friend hath fallen asleep; but [57] I am going to awaken him. 2589 His disciples said unto him, Our Lord, if he hath [58] fallen asleep, he will recover. 2590 But Jesus said that concerning his death: while they [59] supposed that he spake of lying down to sleep. 2591 Then Jesus said unto them plainly, [60] Lazarus is dead. 2592 And I am glad that I was not there for your sakes, that ye may [61] believe; but let us go thither. 2593 Thomas, who is called Thama, [2594] said to the disciples, his companions, Let us also go, and die with him.

Section XXXVIII.
2596 And Jesus came to Bethany, and found him already four days in the grave. 2597 And Bethany was beside Jerusalem, and its distance from it was a sum of fifteen furlongs; 2598 [3] 2599 and many of the Jews came unto Mary and Martha, to comfort their heart [4] because of their brother. 2600 And Martha, when she heard that Jesus had come, went [5] out to meet him: but Mary was sitting in the house. 2601 Martha then said unto Jesus, [6] My Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 2602 But I know now that, [7] whatever thou shalt ask of God, he will give thee. 2603 Jesus said unto her, Thy brother shall [8] rise. 2604 Martha said unto him, I know that he shall rise in the resurrection at the last day. [9] 2605 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: whosoever believeth in [10] [Arabic, p. 144] me, even though he die, he shall live: 2606 and every living one that believeth [11] in me shall never die. Believest thou this? 2607 She said unto him, Yea, my Lord: I believe that thou art the Messiah, the Son of God, that cometh into the [12] world. 2608 And when she had said that, she went and called Mary her sister secretly, [13] and said unto her, Our Master hath come, and summoneth thee. 2609 And Mary, when [14] she heard, rose in haste, and came unto him. 2610 (And Jesus then had not come into [15] the village, but was in the place where Martha met him.) 2611 And the Jews also that were with her in the house, to comfort her, when they saw that Mary rose up and went out in haste, went after her, because they supposed that she was going to the [16] tomb to weep. 2612 And Mary, when she came to where Jesus was, and saw him, fell at his feet, and said unto him, If thou hadst been here, my Lord, my brother had [17] not died. 2613 And Jesus came; and when he saw her weeping, and the Jews that were [18] with her weeping, he was troubled 2614 in himself, and sighed; and he said, 2615 In what [19] place have ye laid him? And they said unto him, Our Lord, come and see. 2616 And [20] the tears of Jesus came. 2617 The Jews therefore said, See the greatness of his love for [21] him! 2618 But some of them said, Could not this man, who opened the eyes of that [22] blind man, have caused that this man also

2596 John xi. 17.
2597 John xi. 18.
2598 Arabic mil, a somewhat indefinite distance.
2599 John xi. 19.
2600 John xi. 20.
2601 John xi. 21.
2602 John xi. 22.
2603 John xi. 23.
2604 John xi. 24.
2605 John xi. 25.
2607 John xi. 27.
2608 John xi. 28.
2609 John xi. 29.
2610 John xi. 30.
2611 John xi. 31.
2612 John xi. 32.
2613 John xi. 33.
2594 This is the Syriac word (cf. the versions, and below, § 44, 44; see also Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary, ad loc).
2595 John xi. 34.
2596 John xi. 35.
2597 So in Syriac versions.
2608 John xi. 36.
2609 John xi. 37.
And Jesus came to the place of burial, being troubled within himself. And the place of burial was a cave, [23] and a stone was placed at its door. 2621 Jesus therefore said, Take these stones away. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, said unto him, My Lord, he hath come to [24] stink for some time: he hath been four days dead. 2622 Jesus said unto her, Did not I say [25] [Arabic, p. 145] unto thee, If thou believest, thou shalt see the glory of God? 2623 And they removed those stones. And Jesus lifted his eyes on high, and said, My Father, [26] I thank thee since thou didst hear me. 2624 And I know that thou at all times hearest me: but I say this unto thee because of this multitude that is standing, that they [27] may believe that thou didst send me. 2625 And when he had said that, he cried with a [28] loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 2626 And that dead man came out, having his hands and feet bound with bandages, and his face wrapped in a scarf. Jesus said unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

[29] 2627 And many of the Jews which came unto Mary, when they saw the deed of Jesus, [30] believed in him. 2628 But some of them went to the Pharisees, and informed them of all that Jesus did.

[31] 2630 And the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered, and said, What shall we do? [32] for lo, this man doeth many signs. 2631 And if we leave him thus, all men will believe [33] in him: and the Romans will come and take our country and people. 2632 And one of them, who was called Caiaphas, the chief priest he was in that year, said unto them, [34] Ye know not anything, nor consider that it is more advantageous for us that one [35] man should die instead of the people, and not that the whole people perish. 2633 And this he said not of himself: but because he was the chief priest of that year, he [36] prophesied that Jesus was to die instead of the people; 2634 and not instead of the people alone, but that he might gather the scattered children of God together. [37] 2636 And from that day they considered how to kill him.

[38] [Arabic, p. 146] 2637 And Jesus did not walk openly amongst the Jews, but departed thence to a place near the wilderness, to a town called Ephraim; and he was there, going [39] about with

---

2620 John xi. 38.
2621 John xi. 39.
2622 Borg. ms. omits some time: he hath been.
2623 John xi. 40.
2624 John xi. 41.
2625 John xi. 42.
2626 John xi. 43.
2627 John xi. 44.
2628 John xi. 45.
2629 John xi. 46.
2630 John xi. 47.
2631 John xi. 48.
2632 John xi. 49.
2633 John xi. 50.
2634 John xi. 51.
2635 So both MSS.; but the Vat. MS. had originally a reading equivalent to the text above with of omitted.
2636 John xi. 52.
2637 John xi. 53.
2638 John xi. 54.
2639 The Arabic word as printed (following Vat. MS.) means a place for monks to live in, but we should certainly restore a diacritical point over the last letter, and thus obtain another Syriac loan-word (that used here in the Peshitta), meaning town. See also Ibn-at-Tayyib's Commentary, ad loc.
his disciples. 2640 And the passover of the Jews was near: and many went [40] up from the villages unto Jerusalem before the feast, to purify themselves. 2641 And they sought for Jesus, and said one to another in the temple, What think ye of his [41] holding back from the feast? 2642 And the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any man knew in what place he was, he should reveal it to them, that they might take him.

[42] 2643 And when the days of his going up were accomplished, he prepared himself that [43] he might go to Jerusalem. 2645 And he sent messengers before him, and departed, and [44] entered into a village of Samaria, that they might make ready for him. 2648 And they [45] received him not, because he was prepared for going to Jerusalem. 2650 And when James and John his disciples saw it, they said unto him, Our Lord, wilt thou that we speak, and fire come down from heaven, to extirpate them, as did Elijah also? [46] 2651 And Jesus turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not of what spirit ye are. [47] 2652 Verily the Son of man did not come to destroy lives, but to give life. And they went to another village.

Section XXXIX.

[1] 2653 And Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where was Lazarus, [2] whom Jesus raised from among the dead. 2655 And they made a feast for him there: [3] and Martha was serving; while Lazarus was one of them that sat with him. 2657 And [4] at the time of Jesus’ being at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, 2658 great multitudes of the Jews heard that Jesus was there: and they came, not because of Jesus alone, but [Arabic, p. 147] that they might look also on Lazarus, whom he raised from among the dead. [5, 6] 2659 And the chief priests considered how they might kill Lazarus also; 2660 because [7] many of the Jews were going on his account, and

2640 John xi. 55. 2641 John xi. 56. 2642 John xi. 57. 2643 Luke ix. 51. 2644 The present Arabic reading in going could pretty easily arise from that assumed in the translation above. 2645 Luke ix. 52. 2646 This and the following verb are singular in the printed Arabic (against the versions), although Ciasca renders them plural. 2647 cf. note, § 1, 40. 2648 Luke ix. 53. 2649 Lit. his body. 2650 Luke ix. 54. 2651 Luke ix. 55. 2652 Luke ix. 56. 2653 John xii. 1. 2654 cf. the Greek phrase. 2655 John xii. 2. 2656 Lit. he made (cf. first note to § 38, 43, last sentence). 2657 Mark xiv. 3a. 2658 John xii. 9. 2659 John xii. 10. 2660 John xii. 11.
believing in Jesus. 2661 And Mary took a case of the ointment of fine nard, of great price, 2662 and opened it, and poured [8] it out on the head of Jesus as he was reclining; 2663 and she anointed his feet, and wiped them with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. [9, 10] 2664 But Judas Iscariot, one of the disciples, he that was to betray him, said, 2665 Why was [11] not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given unto the poor? 2666 This he said, not because of his care for the poor, but because he was a thief, and the chest [12] was with him, and what was put 2667 into it he used to bear. 2668 And that displeased the rest of the disciples also within themselves, and they said, Why went this ointment [13] to waste? 2669 It was possible that it should be sold for much, and the poor be given [14] it. 2670 And they were angry with 2671 Mary. 2672 And Jesus perceived it, and said unto them, 2673 Leave her; why molest ye her? a good work hath she accomplished on me; 2674 for the [15] day of my burial kept she it. 2675 At all times the poor are with you, and when ye [16] wish ye can do them a kindness: 2676 but I am not at all times with you. 2677 And for this cause, when she poured 2678 this ointment on my body, it is as if she did it for my burial, [17] and anointed my body beforehand. 2679 And verily I say unto you, In every place where this my gospel shall be proclaimed in all the world, what she did shall be told for a memorial of her.

[18, 19] [Arabic, p. 148] 2680 And when Jesus said that, he went out leisurely to go to Jerusalem. 2681 And when he arrived at Bethphage and at Bethany, beside the mount which is [20] called the mount of Olives, 2682 Jesus sent two of his disciples, and he said unto them, Go [21] into this village that is opposite you: 2683 and when ye enter it, ye shall find an ass tied, and [22] a colt with him, 2684 which no man ever yet mounted: loose him, and bring them 2685 unto me. 2686 And if any man say
unto you, Why loose ye them? say unto him thus, We [23] seek them for our Lord; and straightway send them hither. All this was, that what was said in the prophet might be fulfilled, which said,

[24] Say ye unto the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, Meek, and riding upon an ass, And upon a colt the foal of an ass.

[25] And the disciples did not know this at that time: but after that Jesus was glorified, his disciples remembered that these things were written of him, and that this [26] they had done unto him. And when the two disciples went, they found as he had [27] said unto them, and they did as Jesus charged them. And when they loosed them, [28] their owners said unto them, Why loose ye them? They said unto them, We seek [29] them for our Lord. And they let them go. And they brought the ass and the colt, [30] and they placed on the colt their garments; and Jesus mounted it. And most of the multitudes spread their garments on the ground before him: and others cut branches [31] from the trees, and threw them in the way. And when he neared his descent from the mount of Olives, all the disciples began to rejoice and to praise God with a loud voice for all the powers which they had seen; and they said, Praise in the highest; Praise to the Son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; and blessed is the kingdom that cometh, that of our father David: Peace in heaven, and praise in the highest.

[34] And a great multitude, that which came to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took young palm branches, and went forth to meet him, and cried and said, Praise: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, the [36] King of Israel. Certain therefore of the Pharisees from among the multitudes said unto him, Our Master, rebuke thy disciples. He said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If these were silent, the stones would cry out.

---

2687 Matt. xxi. 3b; Matt. xxi. 4.
2688 Matt. xxi. 5.
2689 John xii. 16.
2690 Matt. xxi. 6a; Luke xix. 32b.
2691 Matt. xxi. 6b; Luke xix. 33.
2692 Luke xix. 34.
2693 Mark xi. 6b; Matt. xxi. 7.
2694 Matt. xxi. 8.
2696 The Syriac versions have the.
2697 Matt. xxi. 9b [or better Luke xix. 38a].
2698 Mark xi. 10a.
2699 Or, and, Blessed.
2700 The Arabic has to, but it probably represents the Syriac text with the meaning given above.
2701 Luke xix. 38c.
2702 John xii. 12b.
2703 Lit. the heart (or, pith) of the palm. The word pith, which occurs also in the Æhiopic version (Ezek. xxvii. 25; Jubilees, ch. 16) and in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s exposition, though not in the Brit. Mus. gospel text, is perhaps used here of the inner branches from its resemblance to the post-biblical Hebrew word employed in accounts of the Feast of Tabernacles.

---

158
And when he drew near, and saw the city, he wept over it, and said, Would that thou hadst known the things that are for thy peace, in this thy day! now that is hidden from thine eyes. The shall come unto thee days when thine enemies shall encompass thee, and straiten thee from every quarter, and shall get possession of thee, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee a stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

And when he entered into Jerusalem, the whole city was agitated, and they said, Who is this? And the multitudes said, This is Jesus, the prophet that is from Nazareth of Galilee. And the multitude which was with him bare witness that he called Lazarus from the grave, and raised him from among the dead. And for this cause great multitudes went out to meet him, because they heard the sign which he did.

Section XL.

And when Jesus entered the temple, they brought unto him blind and lame: and he healed them. But when the chief priests and the Pharisees saw the wonders that he did, and the children that were crying in the temple and saying, Praise be to the Son of David: it distressed them, and they said, Hearest thou not what these say? Jesus said unto them, Yea: did ye not read long ago, From the mouths of children and infants thou hast chosen my praise?

And the Pharisees said one to another, Behold, do ye not see that nothing availeth us? for lo, the whole world hath followed him.

And there were among them certain Gentiles also, which had come up to worship [6] at the feast; these therefore came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, and said unto him, My lord, we wish to see Jesus. And Philip [8] came and told Andrew: and Andrew and Philip told Jesus. And Jesus answered and said unto them, The hour is come nigh,
in which the Son of man is to be glorified. [9] 2725 Verily, verily, I say unto you, A grain of wheat, if it fall not and die in the [10] earth, remaineth alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. 2726 He that loveth his life2727 destroyeth it; and he that hateth his life2728 in this world shall keep it unto the life eternal. [11] 2729 If a man serve me, he will follow me; and where I am, there shall my servant be [12] also: and whosoever serveth me, the Father will honour him. 2730 Now is my soul troubled: [Arabic, p. 151] and what shall I say? My Father, deliver me from this hour. But [13] for this cause came I unto this hour. 2731 My Father, glorify thy name. And a [14] voice was heard from heaven, I have glorified it, and shall glorify it. 2732 And the multitude that were standing heard, and said, This is thunder: and others said, An [15] angel speaketh to him. 2733 Jesus answered and said unto them, Not because of me [16] was this voice, but because of you. 2734 Now is the judgement of this world; and the [17] prince of this world shall now be cast forth. 2735 And I, when I am lifted up from the [18] earth, shall draw every man unto me. 2736 This he said, that he might shew by what [19] manner of death he should die. 2737 The multitudes said unto him, We have heard out of the law that the Messiah abideth for ever: how then sayest thou, that the Son of [20] man is to be lifted up? who is this, the Son of man? 2738 Jesus said unto them, Another little while is the light with you. Walk so long as ye have light, lest the darkness overtake you; for he that walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. [21] 2739 So long as ye have light, believe the light, that ye may be the children of the light.

[22] 2740 And when certain of the Pharisees asked of Jesus, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered and said unto them, The kingdom of God cometh not [23] with expectation: 2741 neither shall they say, Lo, it is here! nor, Lo, it is there! for the kingdom of God is within you. [24] 2742 And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple; and at night he used to go [25] out, and pass the night in the mount called the mount of Olives. 2743 And all the people came2744 to him in the morning in the temple, to hear his word.
Then spake Jesus unto the multitudes and his disciples, and said unto them, 2746 On the seat of Moses are seated the scribes and Pharisees: 2747 everything that they say unto you now to keep, keep and do: but according to their deeds [29] do ye not; for they say, and do not. 2748 And they bind heavy burdens, and lay them on the shoulders of the people; while they with one of their fingers will not come [30, 31] near them. 2750 But all their deeds they do to make a shew before men. 2751 And all the multitude were hearing that with pleasure.

And in the course of his teaching he said unto them, Guard yourselves from the [33] scribes, who desire to walk in robes, 2753 and love salutation in the marketplaces, and sitting in the highest places of the synagogues, and at feasts in the highest parts of [34] the rooms: 2754 and they broaden their amulets, and lengthen the cords of their cloaks, [35] 2755 and love that they should be called by men, My master, 2756 and devour widows’ houses, because 2757 of their prolonging their prayers; these then shall receive greater judgement. 2758 But ye, be ye not called masters: 2759 for your master is one; all ye are brethren. 2760 Call not then to yourselves any one father on earth: for your Father is one, who is [38] in heaven. 2761 And be not called directors: for your director is one, even the Messiah. 2762 He that is great among you shall be unto you a minister. 2763 Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and whosoever shall abase himself shall be exalted.

Woe unto you, Pharisees! because ye love the highest places in the synagogues, and salutation in the marketplaces. 2765 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye devour widows’ houses, because 2767 of your prolonging your prayers: for this reason then ye shall receive greater judgement. 2768 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye have shut the kingdom of God before men.
Woe unto you that know the law! for ye concealed the keys of knowledge: ye enter not, and those that are entering ye suffer not to enter.

Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye compass land and sea to draw one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him a son of hell twice as much as yourselves.

Woe unto you, ye blind guides! because ye say, Whosoever sweareth by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gold that is in the temple, [47] shall be condemned. Ye blind foolish ones: which is greater, the gold, or the [48] temple which sanctifieth the gold? And, Whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the offering that is upon it, shall be condemned. [49] Ye blind foolish ones: which is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth [50] the offering? Whosoever then sweareth by the altar, hath sworn by it, and by all [51] that is upon it. And whosoever sweareth by the temple, hath sworn by it, and by [52] him that is dwelling in it. And whosoever sweareth by heaven, hath sworn by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth upon it.

Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye resemble the Levite and the hireling guide; and the blind guide, which strain out a gnat, and swallow camels.

Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye resemble whited sepulchres, which appear from the outside beautiful, but within full of the bones of...
the dead, and all uncleanness. 2791 So ye also from without appear unto men like the righteous, but within ye are full of wrong and hypocrisy.

[59] 2792 One of the scribes answered and said unto him, Teacher, in this saying of thine [60] thou art casting a slur on us. 2793 He said, And to you also, ye scribes, woe! for ye lade men with heavy burdens, and ye with one of your fingers come not near2794 those burdens.

[61] 2795 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, which your fathers killed, and adorn the burying-places of the righteous, [62] and say, 2796 If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not have been partakers [63] with them in the blood of the prophets. 2797 Wherefore, behold, ye witness against [64] yourselves, that ye are the children of those that slew the prophets. 2798 And ye also, [65] ye fill up the measure2799 of your fathers. 2800 Ye serpents, ye children of vipers, where shall ye flee from the judgement of Gehenna?

Section XLI.

[1] 2801 Therefore, behold, I, the wisdom of God, am sending unto you prophets, and apostles, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall slay and crucify; and some of them ye shall beat in your synagogues, and persecute2802 from city to [2] city: 2803 that there may come on you all the blood of the righteous that hath been poured upon the ground2804 from the blood of Abel the pure to the blood of Zachariah the son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple2805 and the altar. [3] 2806 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. 2807 [4] [Arabic, p. 155] 2808 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, slayer of the prophets, and stoner of them that are sent unto her! how many times did I wish to gather thy children, as [5] a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! 2809 Your house shall [6] be left over you desolate.

2810 Verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

2591 Matt. xxiii. 28.
2592 Luke xi. 45.
2593 Luke xi. 46.
2594 Or, touch.
2595 Matt. xxiii. 29a; Luke xi. 47b; Matt. xxiii. 29b.
2596 Matt. xxiii. 30.
2597 Matt. xxiii. 31.
2598 Matt. xxiii. 32.
2599 Lit. boundary or limit.
2600 Matt. xxiii. 33.
2601 Matt. xxiii. 34.
2602 cf. 8, 34.
2603 Matt. xxiii. 35.
2604 Or, earth.
2605 Or, sanctuary.
2606 Matt. xxiii. 36.
2607 See § 1, 49, note.
2608 Matt. xxiii. 37.
2609 Matt. xxiii. 38.
2610 Matt. xxiii. 39.
And many of the rulers also believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they [8] were not confessing him, lest they be put out of the synagogue: 2812 and they loved [9] the praise of men more than the praising of God. 2814 And Jesus cried and said, [10] Whosoever believeth in me, believeth not in me, but in him that sent me. 2815 And [11] whosoever seeth me hath seen him that sent me. 2816 I am come a light into the [12] world, and so every one that believeth in me abideth not in the darkness. 2818 And whosoever heareth my sayings, and keepeth them not, I judge him not: for I came [13] not to judge the world, but to give the world life. 2819 2820 Whosoever wrongeth me, and receiveth not my sayings, there is one that judgeth him: the word that I spake, it [14] shall judge him at the last day. 2822 I from myself did not speak: but the Father which sent me, he hath given me commandment, what I should say, and what I [15] should speak; and I know that his commandment is eternal life. 2824 The things that I say now, as my Father hath said unto me, even so I say.

[16] 2826 And when he said that unto them, the scribes and Pharisees began their evil-doing, being angry with him, and finding fault with his sayings, and harassing him [17] in many things; seeking to catch something from his mouth, that they might be able to calumniate him.

[18] 2829 And when there gathered together myriads of great multitudes, which almost trode [Arabic, p. 156] one upon another, Jesus began to say unto his disciples, Preserve yourselves [19] from the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2830 For there is nothing [20] concealed, that shall not be revealed: nor hid, that shall not be known. 2831 Everything that ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken secretly in the ears in the inner chambers shall be proclaimed on the roofs.

---

2811 John xii. 42.
2812 Lit. become.
2813 John xii. 43.
2814 John xii. 44.
2815 John xii. 45.
2816 John xii. 46.
2817 The text as it stands ought to mean I am a light. I am come; but it is a word-for-word reproduction of the Peshitta, and should therefore doubtless be rendered as above.
2818 John xii. 47.
2819 Or, to save the world (cf. § 1, 78, note).
2820 John xii. 48.
2821 See § 20, 28, note.
2822 John xii. 49.
2823 Not the same word.
2824 Not the same word.
2825 John xii. 50.
2826 Luke xi. 53.
2827 So Ciasca, following Vat. MS. The true reading, however, is probably that underlying the Borg. MS. If we restore diacritical points to the radical letters we get deceiving (cf. § 41, 31), an alternative meaning for the word laying wait for, used in the Peshitta. The Arabic follows the Peshitta very closely in this and the following verse.
2828 Luke xi. 54.
2830 Luke xii. 2.
2831 Luke xii. 3.
[21, 22] 2832This said Jesus, and he went and hid himself from them. 2833But notwithstanding [23] his having done all these signs before them, they believed not in him: 2834that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, who said,

My Lord, who is he that hath believed to hear us?
And the arm of the Lord, to whom hath it appeared?

[24] 2835And for this reason it is not possible for them to believe, because Isaiah also said,

[25] 2836They have blinded their eyes, and made dark their heart;
That they may not see with their eyes, and understand with their heart,
And turn,
So that I should heal them.

[26] 2837This said Isaiah when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

[27] 2838And when Jesus went out of the temple, certain of his disciples came forward [28] to shew 2839 him the buildings of the temple, 2840and its beauty and greatness, and the strength of the stones that were laid in it, and the elegance of its building, and that [29] it was adorned with noble stones and beautiful colours. 2841Jesus answered and said [30] unto them, See ye these great buildings? 2842verily I say unto you, Days will come, when there shall not be left here a stone upon another, that shall not be cast down.

[31] 2843And two days before 2844 the passover of unleavened bread, the chief priests and [32] the scribes sought how they might take him by deceit, 2845and kill him: 2846and they said, It shall not be at the feast, lest the people be agitated.

[33] 2847And when Jesus sat on the mount of Olives opposite the temple, his disciples, Simon Cephas and James and John and Andrew, came forward unto him, and said unto him [34] between themselves and him, 2848Teacher, tell us when that shall be, and what is the sign [35] [Arabic, p. 157] of thy coming and the end of the world. 2849Jesus answered and said unto them, Days will come, when ye shall long to see one of the days of the Son of [36, 37] 2850man, and shall not behold. 2851Take heed lest any man lead you astray. Many shall [38] come in my name, and say, I am the

2832 John xii. 36b.
2833 John xii. 37.
2834 John xii. 38.
2835 John xii. 39.
2836 John xii. 40.
2837 John xii. 41.
2838 Matt. xxiv. 1.
2839 Or, and shewed.
2840 Mark xiii. 1b; Luke xxii. 5b.
2841 Matt. xxiv. 2.
2842 Luke xix. 43a; Luke xix. 44b [or rather Matt. xxiv. 2b, or Mark xiii. 2b].
2843 Mark xiv. 1.
2844 Lit. before two days would be (cf. Sin. and above, § 39, 1, note).
2845 cf. § 41, 16, note.
2846 Mark xiv. 2.
2847 Mark xiii. 3.
2848 Luke xxi. 7b; Matt. xxiv. 3b.
2849 Matt. xxiv. 4a; Luke xvii. 22b; Matt. xxiv. 4b.
2850 Matt. xxiv. 5a.
2851 Luke xxi. 8b.
Messiah; and they shall say, The time is come [39] near, and shall lead many astray: go not therefore after them. 2853 And when ye hear of wars and tidings of insurrections, see to it, be not agitated: for these things must [40] first be; only the end is not yet come. 2855 Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom [41] against kingdom: and great earthquakes shall be in one place and another, and there shall be famines and deaths and agitations: and there shall be fear and terror and great signs that shall appear from heaven, and there shall be great [42, 43] storms. 2858 All these things are the beginning of travail. 2859 But before all of that, they shall lay hands upon you, and persecute you, and deliver you unto the synagogues [44] and into prisons, and bring you before kings and judges for my name’s sake. 2860 And [45] that shall be unto you for a witness. 2861 But first must my gospel be preached unto all [46] nations. 2862 And when they bring you into the synagogues before the rulers and the authorities, be not anxious beforehand how ye shall answer for yourselves, or what ye [47, 48] shall say: 2863 because it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Spirit. 2864 Lay it to your heart, not [49] [Arabic, p. 158] to be anxious beforehand how ye shall say: 2865 and I shall give you understanding and wisdom, 2866 which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay. [50] 2867 And then shall they deliver you unto constraint, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations because of my name. 2868 And then shall many go astray, [2870] and they shall hate one another, and deliver one another unto death. 2871 And your parents, and your brethren, and your kinsfolk, and your friends shall deliver you up, and shall [53, 54] slay some of you. 2872 But a lock of hair from your heads shall not perish. 2873 And by [55] your patience ye shall gain your souls. 2874 And many men, false prophets, shall arise, [56] and lead many astray.

282 Mark xiii. 6b; Luke xxi. 8c.
283 Mark xiii. 7a; Matt. xxiv. 7b; Luke xxi. 9b.
284 Or, that ye be, if we suppose the present text to have resulted from the loss of the second of two alifs.
285 Matt. xxiv. 7a.
286 Luke xxi. 11.
287 Or, omit that.
288Matt. xxiv. 8.
281 Mark xiii. 10.
282 Luke xii. 11.
283 Mark xiii. 11b.
286 The Arabic text lacks a letter.
287 Borg, ms. reads you the fruits of wisdom.
288 Matt. xxiv. 9.
289 Matt. xxiv. 30.
290 See § 25, 17, note.
291 Luke xxi. 16.
294 Or, possess.
295 Matt. xxiv. 11.
296 So the Arabic text; but it doubtless simply represents the Syriac, which here agrees with the Greek.
2877 And because of the abounding of iniquity, the love of many [57] shall wax cold. 2878 But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. 2879 And [58] this, the gospel of the kingdom, shall be preached in all the world for a testimony to all nations; and then shall come the end of all.

Section XLII.

[1] 2881 But when ye see Jerusalem with the army compassing it about, then know that [2] its desolation is come near. 2882 Those then that are in Judæa at that time shall flee to the mountain; and those that are within her shall flee; and those that are in the [3] villages shall not enter her. 2883 For these days are the days of vengeance, that all that [4] is written may be fulfilled. 2884 And when ye see the unclean sign of desolation, spoken of in Daniel the prophet, standing in the pure place, he that readeth shall understand, [5, 6] and then he that is in Judæa shall flee in to the mountain: 2887 and let him that is on the [7] roof not go down, nor enter in to take anything from his house: 2888 and let him that is in [8] [Arabic, p. 159] the field not turn behind him to take his garment. 2889 Woe to them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath against this nation. 2890 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword, and shall be taken captive to every land: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the nations, until the times of the nations be ended.

[10] 2892 Then if any man say unto you, The Messiah is here; or, Lo, he is there; believe [11] him not: 2893 there shall rise then false Messiahs and prophets of lying, and shall do signs and wonders, in order that they may lead astray even the elect also, if they [12] be able. 2894 But as for you, beware: for I have acquainted you with everything [13] beforehand. 2895 If then they say unto you, Lo, he is in the desert; go not out, lest ye [14] be taken: and if they say unto you, Lo, he is in the chamber; believe not. 2896 And as the lightning appeareth from the east, and is seen unto the west; so shall be...
the [15] coming of the Son of man. 2897 But first he must suffer much and be rejected by this [16] generation. 2898 2899 Pray therefore that your flight be not in winter, nor on a sabbath: [17] 2900 there shall be then great tribulation, 2901 the like of which there hath not been from the [18] beginning of the world till now, nor shall be. 2902 And except the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh would have lived: but because of the elect, whom he elected, [19] he shortened those days. 2903 And there shall be signs in the sun and the moon and the stars; and upon the earth affliction 2904 of the nations, and rubbing of hands for the confusion 2905 [20] [Arabic, p. 160] of the noise of the sea, and an earthquake: 2906 the souls of men shall [21] go forth from fear of that which is to come upon the earth. 2907 And in those days, straightway after the distress of those days, the sun shall become dark, and the moon shall not shew its light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers [22] of heaven shall be convulsed: 2908 and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and at that time all the tribes of the earth shall wail, and look unto the Son [23] of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and much glory. 2909 And he shall send his angels with the great trumpet, and they shall gather his elect from the four [24] winds, from one end of heaven to the other. 2910 2911 But when these things begin to be, be of good cheer, and lift up your heads; for your salvation is come near.

[25] 2913 Learn the example of the fig tree: when it letteth down its branches, 2914 and putteth [26] forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is come; 2915 so ye also, when ye see these things begun to be, know ye that the kingdom of God hath arrived at the [27] door. 2916 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, until all these [28] things shall be. 2917 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my sayings shall not pass away.

[29] 2918 Take heed to yourselves, that your hearts become not heavy with inordinate desire, 2919 and drunkenness, and the care of the world at any time, and that day come [30] upon you suddenly:

2898 cf. § 16, 2.
2899 Matt. xxiv. 20.
2900 Matt. xxiv. 21.
2901 Same Arabic (and Syriac) word as in § 41, 50.
2902 Mark xiii. 20.
2903 Luke xxi. 25.
2904 Same Arabic (and Syriac) word as in § 41, 50.
2905 So the Borg. MS. The Vat. MS., followed by Ciasca, has grief.
2907 Mark xiii. 24a; Matt. xxiv. 29.
2908 Matt. xxiv. 30.
2909 Matt. xxiv. 31.
2910 Lit. the end of heaven unto its end.
2911 Luke xxi. 28.
2912 Or, deliverance.
2913 Matt. xxiv. 32.
2914 cf. Peshitta, which text the translator seems to have misread.
2915 Matt. xxiv. 33.
2916 Matt. xxiv. 34.
2917 Matt. xxiv. 35.
2918 Luke xxi. 34.
2919 cf. Peshitta.
for it is as a shock that shocks all the inhabitants that are on the [31] face of the whole earth.

Watch at all times, and pray, that ye may be worthy to escape [Arabic, p. 161] from all the things that are to be, and that ye may stand before the Son of [32] man. 2922Of that day and of that hour hath no man learned, not even the angels [33] of heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. 2923See ye, and watch and pray: for ye know [34] not when that time will be. 2924It is as a man, who journeyed, and left his house, and gave his authority to his servants, and appointed every man to his work, and [35] charged the porter to be watchful. 2925Be watchful then;2926 since ye know not when the lord of the house cometh, in the evening, or in the middle of the night, or when the [36] cock croweth, or in the morning; 2927lest he come unexpectedly, and find you sleeping. 3972The thing that I say unto you, unto all of you do I say it, Be ye watchful.

3973For as it was in the days of Noah, so shall the coming of the Son of man be. 3974As they were before the flood eating and drinking, and taking wives, and giving [40] wives to men, until the day in which Noah entered into the ark, and they perceived not till the flood came, and took them all; so shall the coming of the Son of man [41] be. 3975And as it was in the days of Lot; they were eating and drinking, and selling [42] and buying, and planting and building, on the day in which Lot went out from Sodom, and the Lord rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them [43, 44] all: 3976so shall it be in the day in which the Son of man is revealed.3977And in that day, whosoever is on the roof, and his garments in the house, let him not go down to [45] take them: and he that is in the field shall not turn behind him. 3978Remember Lot’s [46] wife. 3979Whosoever shall desire to save his life shall destroy it: but whosoever shall [47] destroy his life shall save it. 3980Verily I say unto you, In that night there shall be two on [48] [Arabic, p. 162] one bed; one shall be taken, and another left. 3981And two women shall be grinding [49] at one mill; one shall be taken, and another left. 3982And two shall be in the [50] field; one shall be taken, and another left. 3983They answered and said unto him, To what place, our Lord? He said unto

2920 Luke xxi. 35.
2921 Luke xxii. 36.
2922 Mark iii. 32.
2923 Mark iii. 33.
2924 Mark iii. 34.
2925 Mark iii. 35.
2926 Luke xv. 16.
2928 cf. § 9, 21.
2929 Luke xiii. 36.
2931 Matt. xxiv. 37.
2932 Matt. xxiv. 38.
2933 Matt. xxiv. 39.
2934 Luke xvii. 28.
2935 Luke xvii. 29.
2938 Or, appeareth.
2940 cf. § 14, 24 note.
2941 Luke xxi. 32.
2943 Luke xliii. 34.
2944 Luke xliii. 35.
2945 Luke xliii. 36.

169
them, Where the body is, there will the eagles [51, 52] gather. 2944 Be attentive now: for ye know not at what hour your Lord cometh. 2945 Know this: if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have been attentive, and would not make it possible that his house should be [53] broken through. 2946 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

Section XLIII.

[1] 2947 Simon Cephas said unto him, Our Lord, is it to us that thou hast spoken this [2] parable, or also to every man? 2948 Jesus said unto him, Who, thinkest thou, is the servant, the master of the house, 2949 trusted with control, whom his lord set over his [3] household, to give them their food in its season? 2950 Blessed is that servant, whom his [4] lord shall come and find having done so. 2951 Verily I say unto you, He will set him [5] over all that he hath. 2952 But if that evil servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his [6] coming; 2953 and shall begin to beat his servants and the maidservants of his lord, and [7] shall begin to eat and to drink with the drunken; 2954 the lord of that servant shall come [8] in the day that he thinketh not, and in the hour that he knoweth not, 2955 and shall [Arabic, p. 163] judge him, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites, 2956 and with those that are not faithful: 2957 there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

[9] 2958 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be like unto ten virgins, those that took their [10] lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom and the bride. 2959 Five of them were [11] wise, and five foolish. 2960 And those foolish ones took their lamps, and took not with [12, 13] them oil; 2961 but those wise ones took oil in vessels along with their lamps. 2962 When then [14] the bridegroom delayed, they all slumbered and slept. 2963 But in the middle of the night there occurred a cry, Behold,
the bridegroom cometh! Go forth therefore to [15, 16] meet him. 2965 Then all those virgins arose, and made ready their lamps. 2966 The foolish [17] said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. 2967 But those wise answered and said, Perhaps there will not be enough for us and you: but go ye to [18] the sellers, and buy for yourselves. 2969 And when they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and those that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast: and [19] the door was shut. 2970 And at last those other virgins also came and said, Our Lord, [20] our Lord, open unto us. 2971 He answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, [21] I know you not. 2972 Watch then, for ye know not that day nor that hour.

[22] 2973 It is as a man, who went on a journey, and called his servants, and delivered unto [23] them his possessions. 2974 And unto one he gave five talents, 2975 and another two, and another [24] one; every one according to his strength; and went on his journey forthwith. 2976 He [Arabic, p. 164] then that received the five talents went and traded with them, and gained [26] other five. 2977 And so also he of the two gained other two. 2978 But he that received [27] the one went and digged in the earth, and hid the money of his lord. 2979 And after a long time the lord of those servants came, and took from them the account. [28] 2980 And he that received five talents came near and brought other five, and said, My lord, thou gavest me five talents: lo, I have gained other five in addition to them. [29] 2981 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: over a little hast [30] thou been faithful, over much will I set thee: enter into the joy of thy lord. 2982 And he that had the two came near and said, My lord, thou gavest me two talents: lo, [31] other two have I gained in addition to them. 2983 His lord said unto him, Good, 2984 thou faithful servant: over a little hast thou been faithful, over much will I set thee: enter [32] into the joy of thy lord. 2985 And he also that received the one talent came forward and said, My lord, I knew thee that thou art a severe man, who reapest where thou [33] sowerst not, and gatherest where thou didst not scatter: 2986 and so I was afraid, and [34] went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast what is thine. 2987 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest me [35] that I

| 2965 | Matt. xxv. 7. |
| 2966 | Matt. xxv. 8. |
| 2967 | Matt. xxv. 9. |
| 2968 | See § 10, 17, and § 4, 24, note. |
| 2969 | Matt. xxv. 10. |
| 2970 | Matt. xxv. 11. |
| 2971 | Matt. xxv. 12. |
| 2972 | Matt. xxv. 13. |
| 2973 | Matt. xxv. 14. |
| 2974 | Matt. xxv. 15. |
| 2975 | cf. § 27, 2, note. |
| 2976 | Matt. xxv. 16. |
| 2977 | Matt. xxv. 17. |
| 2978 | Matt. xxv. 18. |
| 2979 | Matt. xxv. 19. |
| 2980 | Matt. xxv. 20. |
| 2981 | Matt. xxv. 21. |
| 2982 | Matt. xxv. 22. |
| 2983 | Matt. xxv. 23. |
| 2984 | A Persian word. The Vat. ms. omits it. |
| 2985 | Matt. xxv. 24. |
| 2986 | Matt. xxv. 25. |
| 2987 | Matt. xxv. 26. |
reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; 2988it was incumbent on thee to put my money to the bank, 2989and then I should come and seek it with its [36] gains. 2990Take now from him the talent, and give it to him that hath ten talents. 3007Whosoever hath shall be given, and he shall have more: but he that hath not, even [38] [Arabic, p. 165] what he hath shall be taken from him. 2992And the unprofitable servant, put him forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

[39, 40] 2993Your loins shall be girded, and your lamps lit; 2994and ye shall be like the people that are looking for their lord, when he shall return from the feast; so that, when [41] he cometh and knocketh, they may at once open unto him. 2995Blessed are those servants, whom their lord shall come and find attentive: verily I say unto you, that he will gird his waist, and make them sit down, and pass through 2996 them and serve [42] them. 2997And if he come in the second watch, or the third, and find thus, blessed are those servants.

[43] 2998But when the Son of man cometh in his glory, and all his pure angels with him, [44] then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: 2999and he will gather before him all the nations, and separate them the one from the other, like the shepherd who separateth [45] the sheep from the goats; 3000and will set 3001 the sheep on his right, and the goats on his [46] left. 3002Then shall the King say to those that are at his right, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundations 3003 of the world: 47] 3004I hungered, and ye gave me to eat; and I thirsted, and ye gave me to drink; and I was a stranger, and ye took me in; 3005and I was naked, and ye clothed me; and I [49] was sick, and ye visited me; and I was in prison, and ye cared for me. 3006Then shall those righteous say unto him, Our Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee? [50] or thirsty, and gave thee to drink? 3007And when saw we thee a stranger, and took [51] thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 3008And when saw we thee sick, or imprisoned, and [52] cared for thee? 3009The King shall answer and say 3010 unto them, Verily I say unto you, What [53] [Arabic, p. 166]

2988 Matt. xxv. 27.
2989 Lit. table (cf. Peshitta).
2990 Matt. xxv. 28.
2991 Matt. xxv. 29.
2992 Matt. xxv. 30.
2993 Luke xii. 35.
2994 Luke xii. 36.
2996 cf. Peshitta (and Greek).
2997 Luke xii. 38.
2998 Matt. xxv. 31.
2999 Matt. xxv. 32.
3000 Matt. xxv. 33.
3001 Or, and setteth; but the Peshitta confirms the rendering given above.
3002 Matt. xxv. 34.
3003 cf. § 17, 17, note.
3004 Matt. xxv. 35.
3005 Matt. xxv. 36.
3006 Matt. xxv. 37.
3007 Matt. xxv. 38.
3008 Matt. xxv. 39.
3009 Matt. xxv. 40.
3010 Perfect tenses, as in Peshitta.
ye did to one of these my brethren, the little ones, ye did unto me. Then shall he say unto those that are on his left also, Depart from me, ye cursed, [54] into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his hosts: I hungered, and ye fed me [55] not; and I thirsted, and ye did not give me to drink; and I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; and I was naked, and ye clothed me not; and I was sick, and imprisoned, [56] and ye visited me not. Then shall those also answer and say, Our Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or naked, or a stranger, or sick, or imprisoned, [57] and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, When ye did it not unto one of these little ones, ye did it not [58] unto me also. And these shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous into eternal life.

Section XLIV.

[1, 2] Then when Jesus finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days will be the passover, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.

Then gathered together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders [4] of the people, unto the court of the chief priest, who was called Caiaphas; and they took counsel together concerning Jesus, that they might seize him by subtlety, and [5] kill him. But they said, Not during the feast, lest there take place a disturbance among the people; for they feared the people.

[6] And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, who was of the number [7] of the twelve. And he went away, and communed with the chief priests, and the scribes, and those that held command in the temple, and said unto them, What [8] [Arabic, p. 167] would ye pay me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they, when they heard it, were pleased, and made ready for him thirty pieces of money. And he promised them, and from that time he sought an opportunity that he might deliver unto them Jesus without the multitude.

---

3017. Matt. xxv. 41.
3018. Matt. xxv. 42.
3019. Matt. xxv. 43.
3020. Matt. xxv. 44.
3021. Matt. xxv. 45.
3022. Matt. xxv. 46.
3024. Matt. xxvi. 2.
3025. Matt. xxvi. 3.
3026. Matt. xxvi. 4.
3027. Matt. xxvi. 5.
3030. Luke xxii. 4a; Matt. xxvi. 15a.
3031. Mark iv. 11a; Matt. xxvi. 15b.
3032. Probably the letter that stands for and should be repeated, and the phrase rendered and appointed.
3033. So Vat. ms. (following Peshitta) and Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary. Borg. ms., followed by Ciasca, has dirhams of money.
3035. Lit. became responsible unto. Syriac versions as in text above (cf. § 44, 33).
3036. The Arabic (lit. a stumbling or a cause of stumbling) doubtless represents the Syriac.
[10] 3032 And on the first day of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, and said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready for thee that thou mayest eat the passover?

[11] 3033 And before the feast of the passover, Jesus knew that the hour was arrived for his departure from this world unto his Father; and he loved his own in this world, [12] and to the last he loved them. 3034 And at the time of the feast, Satan put into the [13] heart of Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, to deliver him up. 3035 And Jesus, because he knew that the Father had delivered into his hands everything, and that he came [14] forth from the Father, and goeth unto God. 3036 rose from supper, and laid aside his [15] garments, 3037 and took a towel, and girded his waist, and poured water into a basin, and began to wash the feet of his disciples, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith [16] his waist was girded. 3038 And when he came to Simon Cephas, Simon said unto [17] him, Dost thou, my Lord, wash for me my feet? 3039 Jesus answered and said unto [18] him, What I do, now thou knowest not; but afterwards thou shalt learn. 3040 Simon said unto him, Thou shalt never wash for me my feet. Jesus said unto him, If I [19] wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 3041 Simon Cephas said unto him, Then, my [20] Lord, wash not for me my feet alone, but my hands also and my head. 3042 Jesus said unto him, He that batheth 3043 needeth not to wash save his feet, whereas his whole [21] body is clean: and ye also are clean, but not all of you. 3044 For Jesus knew him that should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

[22] [Arabic, p. 168] 3045 So when he had washed their feet, he took his garments, and sat down, and [23] said unto them, Know ye what I have done unto you? 3046 Ye call me, Master, [24] and, Lord: and ye say well; so I am. 3047 If then I, now, who am your Lord and Master, have washed for you your feet, how needful is it that ye should wash one another’s feet! [25] 3048 This have I given you as an example, that as I have done to you so ye should do [26] also. 3049 Verily, verily, I say unto you, No servant is greater than his lord; nor an [27] apostle greater than he that sent him. 3050 If ye know that, ye are happy if ye do it. [28] 3051 My saying this 3052 is not for all of you: for I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture might be fulfilled, He that eateth with me bread lifted
against me his [29] heel. 3053 Henceforth I say unto you before it come to pass, that, when it cometh to [30] pass, ye may believe that I am he. 3054 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. 3055 Who is the great one, he that sitteth, or he that serveth? is it not he that sitteth? 3056 I am among you as he that serveth. 3057 But ye are they that have continued with me [33] in my temptations; 3058 I promise you, as my Father promised me, the kingdom, that ye may eat and drink at the table of my kingdom. 3059 Henceforth I say unto you before it come to pass, that, when it cometh to pass, ye may believe that I am he. 3060 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. 3061 And the first day came, the feast of unleavened bread, on which the Jews were wont to sacrifice the passover. 3062 And Jesus sent two of his disciples, Cephas and John, and said unto them, Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat. 3063 Where wilt thou that we make ready for thee? 3064 He said unto them, Go, enter the city; and at the time of your entering, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water; 3065 follow him, and the place where he entereth, say to such an one, the master of the house, Our Master saith, My time is come, and at thy house I keep the passover. 3066 Where then is the lodging-place where I shall eat with my disciples? 3067 And he will shew you a large upper room [40] spread and made ready: there then make ready for us. 3068 And his two disciples went out, and came to the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover as he had said unto them. 3069 And when the evening was come, and the time arrived, Jesus came and reclined, [42] and the twelve apostles with him. 3070 Our Master saith, My time is come, and [Arabic, p. 169] at thy house I keep the passover. 3071 Where then is the lodging-place where I shall eat with my disciples? 3072 And he will shew you a large upper room [40] spread and made ready: there then make ready for us. 3073 And his two disciples went out, and came to the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover as he had said unto them. 3074 And when the evening was come, and the time arrived, Jesus came and reclined, [42] and the twelve apostles with him. 3075 And he said unto them, With desire I have [43] desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: 3076 I say unto you, that henceforth I shall not eat it, until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

3053 John xiii. 19.
3054 John xiii. 20.
3055 Luke xxii. 27.
3059 cf. § 44, 9, note.
3060 cf. § 44, 9, note.
3062 Vat. ms. has the word day on the margin, added by a late hand.
3063 The misprint in the Arabic text has been overlooked in the list of Corrigenda.
3064 Or, kill.
3068 Mark xiv. 13b; Luke xxii. 10b.
3070 Matt. xxvi. 18b.
3073 Mark xiv. 15.
3074 Mark xiv. 16.
3076 Luke xxii. 15.
3077 Luke xxii. 16.
Jesus said that, and was agitated in his spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, [45] I say unto you, One of you, he that eateth with me, shall betray me. 3080 And they were very sorrowful; and they began to say unto him, one after another of [46] them, Can it be I, Lord? 3081 He answered and said unto them, One of the twelve, [47] he that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, will betray me. 3082 And lo, the hand of [48] him that betrayeth me is on the table. 3083 And the Son of man goeth, as it is written of him: woe then to that man by whose hand the Son of man is betrayed! for it [49] would have been better for that man had he not been born. 3084 And the disciples [50] looked one on another, for they knew not to whom he referred; 3085 and they began to search among themselves, who that might be who was to do this.

Section XLV.

[1, 2] [Arabic, p. 170] 3086 And one of his disciples was sitting in his bosom, he whom Jesus loved. 3087 To him Simon Cephas beckoned, that he should ask him who this wax, concerning [3] whom he spake. 3088 And that disciple leaned on Jesus’ breast, and said unto him, [4] My Lord, who is this? 3091 Jesus answered and said, He to whom I shall dip bread, and give it. And Jesus dipped bread, and gave to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. [5] 3092 And after the bread, Satan entered him. And Jesus said unto him, What thou [6] desirest to do, hasten the doing of it. 3093 And no man of them that sat knew why he [7] said this unto him. 3094 And some of them thought, because Judas had the box, that he was bidding him buy what would be needed for the feast; or, that he might pay something to the poor. 3095 Judas the betrayer answered and said, Can it be I, my [9] Master? Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said. 3096 And Judas took the bread straightway, and went forth without: and it was still night.

3078 John xiii. 21a.
3079 The Syriac word is retained. In Arabic it properly means become strong or proud (cf. § 38, 17).
3080 Mark xiv. 18b; Mark xiv. 19.
3081 Mark xiv. 20.
3083 Mark xiv. 21.
3084 John xiii. 22.
3086 John xiii. 23.
3087 The Syriac versions have reclining.
3088 John xiii. 24.
3089 John xiii. 25.
3090 Lit. fell.
3092 John xiii. 27.
3093 John xiii. 28.
3094 John xiii. 29.
3095 Matt. xxvi. 25.
3096 John xiii. 30.
And Jesus said, Now is the Son of man being glorified, and God is being glorified in him; and if God is glorified in him, God also will glorify him in him, and straightway will glorify him.

And while they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and divided; and he gave to his disciples, and said unto them, Take and eat; this is my body. And he took a cup, and gave thanks, and blessed, and gave them, all of you. And they drank of it, all of them. And he said unto them, This is my blood, the new covenant, that is shed for many for the forgiveness of sins. I say unto you, I shall not drink henceforth of this, the juice of the vine, until the day in which I drink of it in the kingdom of God. And thus do ye in remembrance of me. And Jesus said unto Simon, Simon, behold, Satan asketh that he may sift you like wheat: but I entreat, for thee, that thou lose not thy faith, and do thou, at some time, turn and strengthen thy brethren.

My children, another little while am I with you. And ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; I say unto you now also. A new commandment I give you, that ye may love one another; and as I have loved [21] you, so shall ye also love one another. By this shall every man know that ye are [22] my disciples, if ye have love one to another. Simon Cephas said unto him, Our Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered and said unto him, Whither I go, thou canst not now follow me; but later thou shalt come.

Then said Jesus unto them, Ye all shall desert me this night; it is written, I [24] will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered. But after my [25] rising,
I shall go before you into Galilee. 3124 Simon Cephas answered and said unto [26] him, My Lord, if every man desert thee, I shall at no time desert thee. 3125 I am with thee ready for imprisonment and for death. 3126 And my life will I give up for thee. [27] [Arabic, p. 172] 3127 Jesus said unto him, Wilt thou give up thy life for me? 3128 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Thou shalt to-day, during this night, before the cock crow [28] twice, three times deny me, that thou knowest me not. 3129 But Cephas said the more, 3130 Even if it lead to 3131 death with thee, I shall not deny thee, my Lord. And in like manner said all the disciples also.

[29] 3132 Then Jesus said unto them, Let not your hearts be troubled. 3133 believe in God, [30] and believe in me. 3134 The stations 3135 in my Father’s house are many, else I should have told you. 3136 go to prepare for you a place, I shall return again, and take you unto me: and so where I am, there ye [32, 33] shall be also. 3139 And the place that I go ye know, 3140 and the way ye know. 3141 3142 Thomas said unto him, Our Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how is the way for [34] us to the knowledge of that? 3143 3144 Jesus said unto him, I am the way, and the truth, [35] and the life: and no man cometh unto my Father, but through me. 3145 And if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father: and from henceforth ye know him, [36] and have seen him. 3147 Philip 3148 said unto him, Our Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth [37] us. 3149 Jesus said unto him, Have I been all this time with you, and dost thou not know me, Philip? 3150 whosoever hath seen me hath seen the Father; how then sayest [38] thou, Shew us the Father? 3152 Believest thou not that I am in my Father, and my Father in me? and the

3124 Matt. xxvi. 33.
3125 Luke xxii. 33b.
3126 John xiii. 37b.
3127 John xiii. 38a.
3128 Mark xiv. 30b.
3129 Luke xxii. 34b; Mark xiv. 31.
3130 Or, went on saying.
3131 Lit. end in. Or, if I come to (the point of).
3132 John xiv. 1.
3133 The diacritical points in both Vat. (followed by Ciasca) and Borg. mss. appear to demand a rendering inquire for be troubled. In Ibn-at-Tayyib’s comments (not the text), however (with other points), we have the meaning wail (root nhb). Every Syriac version uses a different word.
3134 John xiv. 2.
3135 Or, ranks.
3136 Or, should tell.
3137 Probably the Arabic represents a Syriac For i.
3138 John xiv. 3.
3139 John xiv. 4.
3140 Different words.
3141 Different words.
3142 John xiv. 5.
3143 cf. Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (f. 352a) and order of words in Peshitta (not Sin.).
3144 John xiv. 6.
3145 John xiv. 7.
3146 Lit. have known.
3147 John xiv. 8.
3148 Different forms, as in Peshitta.
3149 John xiv. 9.
3150 More exactly, hast thou not come to know.
3151 Different forms, as in Peshitta.
3152 John xiv. 10.
saying that I say, I say not of myself: but my Father who dwelleth in [39] me, he doeth these deeds. 3153]Believe that I am in my Father, and my Father in me: [40] [Arabic, p. 173] or else believe for the sake of the deeds. 3154]Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever believeth in me, the deeds that I do shall he do also; and [41] more than that shall he do: I go unto the Father. 3155]And what ye shall ask in my [42] name, I shall do unto you, that the Father may be glorified in his Son. 3156]And if ye [43, 44] ask me 3157] in my name, I will do it. 3158]If ye love me, keep my commandments. 3159]And I will entreat of my Father, and he will send unto you another Paraclete, that he [45] may be with you for ever, even the Spirit of truth: 3160]whom the world cannot receive; for it hath not seen him, nor known him: but ye know him; for he hath dwelt 3161] with you, and is in you. 3162]I will not leave you orphans: I will come unto you. [47] 3163]Another little while, and the world seeth me not; but ye see me that I live, and ye [48] shall live also. 3164]And in that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

Section XLVI.

[1] 3165]Whosoever hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will [2] shew myself unto him. 3166]Judas (not Iscariot) said unto him, My Lord, what is the [3] purpose of thy intention to shew thyself to us, and not to the world? 3167]Jesus answered and said unto him, Whosoever loveth me will keep my word: and my Father will love him, and to him will we come, and make our 3168] abode with him. [4] 3169]But he that loveth me not keepeth not my word: and this word that ye hear is not my word, but the Father’s which sent me.

[5, 6] 3170]This have I spoken unto you, while I was yet with you. 3171]But the Paraclete, the Holy Spirit, whom my Father will send in my name, he will teach you everything, and [7] [Arabic, p. 174] he will bring to your remembrance all that I say unto you. 3172]Peace I leave you; my peace I
give unto you: and not as this world giveth, give I unto you. [8] 3173 Let your heart not be troubled, 3174 nor fearful. Ye heard that I said unto you, that I go away, and come unto you. If 3175 ye loved me, ye would rejoice, that I go away to my [9] Father: for my Father is greater than I. 3176 And now I say unto you before it come [10] to pass, that, when it cometh to pass, ye may believe me. 3177 Now I will not speak with you much: the Archon of the world will come, and he will have nothing in [11] me: 3178 but that the world may know that I love my Father, and as my Father charged me, so I do.

[12] 3179 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purses, or wallets, and shoes, 3180 [13] lacked ye perchance anything? They said unto him, Nothing. 3181 He said unto them, Henceforth, whosoever hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise the wallet also: and whosoever hath not a sword, shall sell his garment, and buy for himself a [14] sword. 3182 I say unto you, that this scripture also must be fulfilled in me, that I should be reckoned 3183 with the transgressors: for all that is said of me is fulfilled in [15] me. 3184 His disciples said unto him, Our Lord, lo, here are two swords. He said [16] unto them, They are sufficient. 3185 Arise, let us go hence. And they arose, and praised, and went forth, and went, according to their custom, to the mount of Olives, he and his disciples.

[17] 3186 And he said unto them, I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. [18] 3187 Every branch that produceth not fruit in me, he taketh it: and that which giveth fruit, [19] he cleanseth it, that it may give much fruit. 3188 Ye are already clean because of the word [20] that I have spoken unto you. 3189 Abide in me, and I in you. And as the branch of the [Arabic, p. 175] vine cannot produce fruit of itself, if it be not abiding in the vine; so too ye [21] also, if ye abide not in me. 3190 I am the vine, and ye are the branches: He then that abideth in me, and I in him, he giveth much fruit: for without me ye cannot [22] do anything. 3191 And if a man abide not in me, he is cast without, like a withered [23] branch; and it is gathered, and cast 3192 into the fire, that it may be burned. 3193 If ye abide in me, and my word abide in you, everything that ye desire to ask shall be [24] done unto you. 3194 And herein is the Father glorified, that ye may give much fruit;

3173 John xiv. 28.
3174 This word is quite unlike that used in § 45, 29.
3175 The Syriac form of the introductory particle is wrongly used, for in Arabic it has interrogative force.
3176 John xiv. 29.
3177 John xiv. 30.
3178 John xiv. 31a.
3179 Luke xxii. 35.
3180 The first letter of the Arabic word has lost its diacritical point.
3181 Luke xxii. 36.
3183 A possible rendering of the Syriac he was reckoned.
3185 John xiv. 31b; Luke xxii. 39.
3186 John xv. 1.
3187 John xv. 2.
3188 John xv. 3.
3189 John xv. 4.
3190 John xv. 5.
3191 John xv. 6.
3192 The verbs may be active or passive, but are singular (cf. § 38, 43, note).
3193 John xv. 7.
3194 John xv. 8.
And as my Father loved me, I loved you also: 

[26] abide in my love.  

If ye keep my commands, ye shall abide in my love; as I have [27] kept my Father’s commands, and abode in his love.  

I have spoken that unto you, [28] that my joy may be in you, and your joy be fulfilled.  

This is my commandment, [29] that ye love one another, as I loved you.  

And no love is greater than this, namely, [30] that a man should give his life for his friends.  

Ye are my friends, if ye do all that [31] I command you.  

I call you not now servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: my friends have I now called you; for everything that I heard from [32] my Father I have made known unto you.  

Ye did not choose me, but I chose I you, and appointed you, that ye also should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should abide; and that all ye shall ask my Father in my name, he may give you.  

This I command you, that ye love one another.  

If then ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but ye are not of the world: I chose you out of the world: therefore the world [36] hateth you.  

Remember the word that I said unto you, that no servant is greater than his lord. And if they persecuted me, you also will they persecute; and if they kept my word, your word also will they keep.  

But all these things will they do unto you for my name’s sake, for they have not known him that sent me.  

And if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sins.  

Whosoever hateth me, also hateth my [40] Father.  

And if I had not done the deeds before them that no other man did, they would not have hated me: but now they have seen and hated me and my Father [41] also: that the word may be fulfilled that is written in their law.  

They hated me for [42] nothing.  

But when the Paraclete is come, whom I will send unto you from my Father, even the Spirit of truth, which goeth forth

---

3205. And as my Father loved me, I loved you also: [26] abide in my love.  

3206. Ye are my friends, if ye do all that [31] I command you.  

3207. I call you not now servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: my friends have I now called you; for everything that I heard from [32] my Father I have made known unto you.  

3208. Ye did not choose me, but I chose I you, and appointed you, that ye also should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should abide; and that all ye shall ask my Father in my name, he may give you.  

3212. Remember the word that I said unto you, that no servant is greater than his lord. And if they persecuted me, you also will they persecute; and if they kept my word, your word also will they keep.  

3215. But all these things will they do unto you for my name’s sake, for they have not known him that sent me.  

3217. And if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sins.  

3218. Whosoever hateth me, also hateth my [40] Father.  

3221. But when the Paraclete is come, whom I will send unto you from my Father, even the Spirit of truth, which goeth forth

---

385. John xv. 9.  
386. John xv. 10.  
387. John xv. 11.  
388. Two words from the same root.  
389. Two words from the same root.  
393. John xv. 15.  
394. John xv. 16.  
395. Different words.  
396. Or, shall and will, respectively.  
397. Or, shall and will, respectively.  
398. John xv. 17.  
399. Or, have commanded.  
400. John xv. 18.  
401. John xv. 19.  
402. John xv. 20.  
403. cf. § 8, 34, note.  
404. cf. § 8, 34, note.  
405. John xv. 21.  
406. The Arabic text (Vat.) is grammatically inaccurate, and the Borg. ms. has know not.  
407. John xv. 22.  
408. John xv. 23.  
410. John xv. 25.  
from my Father, he shall bear witness of [43] me: \(3222^\) and ye also bear witness, because from the beginning ye have been with me.

\[44, 45\] \(3223^\) I have said that unto you, that ye may not stumble. \(3224^\) And they shall put you out of their synagogues: and there cometh an\(3226^\) hour when every one that killeth [46] you shall think that he hath offered unto God an offering. \(3227^\) And they will do that, [47] because they do not know me, nor my Father. \(3228^\) I have said that unto you, so that [48] when its time is come, ye may remember it, that I told you. \(3229^\) And this hitherto I said not unto you, because I was with you. But\(3230^\) now I go unto him that sent me; and no [49] man of you asketh me whither I go. \(3231^\) I have said that unto you now, and grief hath [50] come and taken possession of your hearts. \(3232^\) But I say the truth unto you; It is better\(3233^\) for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Paraclete will not come unto you; [51] [Arabic, p. 177] but if I go away, I will send him unto you. \(3234^\) And when he cometh, he will reprove the world for sin, and for righteousness, and for judgement: [52, 53] for sin, \(3235^\) because they have not believed in me; \(3236^\) and for righteousness, because I go [54] to my Father; \(3237^\) and for judgement, because\(3238^\) the Archon of this world hath been [55] judged. \(3239^\) And further have I many things to speak unto you, but ye cannot bear. \(3240^\) [56] now. \(3241^\) Howbeit\(3242^\) when the Spirit of truth is come, he will remind\(3243^\) you of all the truth: he will say nothing from himself; but everything that he heareth, that shall [57] he say: and he shall make known unto you the things that are to be. \(3244^\) And he shall [58] glorify me; for from me shall he take and shew you. \(3245^\) All that my Father hath is mine: therefore said I unto you, that he taketh\(3246^\) of mine, and shall shew\(3247^\) you.

---

3222 John xv. 27.
3223 John xvi. 1.
3224 Lit. sway (as one does in dozing).
3225 John xvi. 2.
3226 Or, the, as in Borg. MS.
3227 John xvi. 3.
3228 John xvi. 4.
3229 John xvi. 5 [in the Greek and English verse 5 begins at But.].
3230 In the Greek and English verse 5 begins at But.
3231 John xvi. 6.
3232 John xvi. 7.
3233 Or, best.
3234 John xvi. 8.
3235 John xvi. 9.
3236 John xvi. 10.
3237 John xvi. 11.
3238 Lit. that (cf. Peshitta).
3239 John xvi. 12.
3240 Or perhaps receive (them). Possibly a Syriac d has been read r. But Ibn-at-Tayyib in the text of his Commentary (f. 357a) has a word which possibly might be rendered accommodate yourselves (to them) (same letters, but last two transposed), while his comment (f. 357b) gives ye cannot bear it.
3241 John xvi. 13.
3242 Or, And.
3243 The Syriac words for remind and lead differ only in the length of a single stroke. Ibn-at-Tayyib (ibid. f. 357b) almost seems to have read illumine you with, although he calls attention to the “Greek” reading.
3244 John xvi. 14.
3245 John xvi. 15.
3246 Same tense.
3247 Same tense.
Section XLVII.

1 3248A little while, and ye shall not behold me; and a little while again, and ye shall [2] behold me; because I go to the Father. 3249His disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he hath said unto us, A little while, and ye shall not behold me; and a little while again, and ye shall behold me: and, I go to my [3] Father? 3250And they said, What is this little while that he hath said? We know not [4] what he speaketh. 3251And Jesus perceived that they were seeking to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said unto you, A little while, and ye behold me not, and a little while again, and ye shall [5] behold me? 3252Verily, verily, 3253 I say unto you, that ye shall weep and grieve, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your grief shall turn3254 to joy.

[6] 3255For, a woman when the time is come for her that she should bring forth, the arrival of the day of her bringing forth distresseth her: but whenever she hath brought forth a son, she remembereth not her distress, for joy at the birth of a man into the [7] world. 3256And ye now also grieve: but I shall see you, and your hearts shall rejoice. [8] [Arabic, p. 178] and your joy no man taketh from you. 3257And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. And verily, verily, 3258 I say unto you, All that ye ask my Father in my name, he will give you. 3259Hitherto ye have asked nothing [9] in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be complete.

[10] 3260I have spoken unto you now in ænigmas:3261 but there will come an hour when3262 I shall not speak to you in ænigmas,3263 but shall reveal unto you the Father plainly,[11] in that day when3264 ye shall ask in my name: 3265 and I say not unto you, that I shall [12] entreat the Father for you; 3266 for the Father loveth you, because ye have loved me, [13] and have believed that I came forth from my Father. 3267I came forth from my Father, and came into the world: and I leave the world, and go unto my Father. [14] 3268His disciples said unto him, Lo, thy speech is now plain, and thou hast not said one [15] thing in an ænigma. 3269Now, lo, we know that thou knowest everything, and
neest not that any man should ask thee: and by this we believe that thou camest forth [16, 17] from God. Jesus said unto them, Believe that an hour cometh, and lo, it hath come, and ye shall be scattered, every one of you to his place, and shall leave me [18] alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. This have I said unto you, that in me ye may have peace. And in the world trouble shall overtake you: but be of good courage; for I have overcome the world.

[19] This said Jesus, and lifted up his eyes unto heaven, and said, My Father, the hour [20] is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son may glorify thee: as thou gavest him authority [21] over all flesh, that all that thou hast given him, he might give them eternal life. And this is eternal life, that they should know that thou alone art true God, and that he [22] [Arabic, p. 179] whom thou didst send is Jesus the Messiah. I glorified thee in the earth, [23] and the work which thou gavest me to do I have accomplished. And now glorify thou me, O Father, beside thee, with that glory which I had with thee [24] before the world was. I made known thy name to the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word. Now they know that all that thou hast given me is from thee: and the sayings which thou gavest me I have given unto them; and they received them, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and believed that thou didst send me. [27] And I ask for their sake: and my asking is not for the world, but for those whom [28] thou hast given me; for they are thine: and all that is mine is thine, and all that is [29] thine is mine: and I am glorified in them. And now I am not in the world, and they are in the world, and I come to thee. My holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given unto me, that they may be one, as we are. When I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: and I kept those whom thou gavest unto me: and no man of them hath perished, but the son of perdition; that [31] the scripture might be fulfilled. Now I come to thee: and this I say in the world, [32] that my joy

3270 John xvi. 31.
3271 John xvi. 32.
3272 John xvi. 33.
3273 John xvii. 1.
3274 John xvii. 2.
3275 Lit. it or him.
3276 John xvii. 3.
3277 In the Borg. ms. the sentence begins with that they might, the preceding clause being omitted.
3278 The above is perhaps the most natural rendering of the Peshitta, which means know thee, who alone art the God of truth, and him whom thou didst send, (even) Jesus the Messiah.
3279 John xvi. 4.
3280 John xvi. 5.
3281 John xvi. 6.
3282 John xvi. 7.
3283 So Ciasca’s text. The Vat. ms. has I, with the Peshitta and probably Sinaitic.
3284 John xvi. 8.
3285 John xvii. 9.
3286 John xvii. 10.
3287 John xvii. 11.
3288 So in Sinaitic. The Peshitta omits My.
3289 John xvi. 12.
3290 John xvii. 13.
may be complete in them. 3291 I have given them thy word; and the world [33] hated them, because they were not of the world, as I was not of the world. 3292 And I ask not this, that thou take them from the world, but that thou keep them from the [34, 35] evil one. 3293 They were not of the world, as I was not of the world. 3294 O Father, sanctify [36] them in thy truth: for thy word is truth. 3295 And as thou didst send me into the world, I [37] [Arabic, p. 180] also send them into the world. 3296 And for their sake I sanctify myself, that they [38] also may be sanctified in the truth. 3297 Neither for these alone do I ask, but for [39] the sake of them that believe in me through their word; 3298 that they may be all one; as thou art in me, and I in thee, and so they also shall be one in us: that the world [40] may believe that thou didst send me. 3299 And the glory which thou hast given unto [41] me I have given unto them; 3300 that they may be one, as we are one; I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfect into one; 3301 and that the world may know that [42] thou didst send me, and that I loved them, as thou lovedst me. 3302 Father, and those whom thou hast given me, I wish that, where I am, they may be with me also; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before [43] the foundation of the world. 3303 My righteous Father, and the world knew thee not, [44] but I know thee; and they knew that thou didst send me; and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known to them; 3304 that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I shall 3305 be in them.

Section XLVIII.
This said Jesus, and went forth with his disciples to a place which was called Gethsemane, on the side that is in the plain of Kidron, the mountain, the place in which was a garden; and he entered thither, he and his disciples. And Judas the betrayer knew that place: for Jesus oft-times met with his disciples there. And when Jesus came to the place, he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, so that I may go and pray; and pray ye, that ye enter not into temptations. And he took with him Cephas and the sons of Zebedee together, James and John; and he began to look sorrowful, and to be anxious. And he said unto them, My soul is distressed unto death: abide ye here, and watch with me. And he withdrew from them a little, and fell on his face, and prayed, so that, if it were possible, this hour might pass him. And he said, Father, thou art able for all things; if thou wilt, let this cup pass me: but let not my will be done. But let thy will be done. And he came to his disciples, and found them sleeping; and said, My Father, if it is not possible with regard to this cup that it pass, except I drink it, thy will be done. And he returned again, and found his disciples sleeping, for their eyes were heavy from their grief and anxiety; and they knew not what to say to him. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed a third time, and said the very same word. And there appeared unto him an angel from heaven, encouraging him. And being afraid he prayed continuously: and

3310 John xviii. 1.
3311 Matt. xxvi. 36.
3312 Vat. ms. has and on.
3313 The word rendered plain (cf. Dozy, Supplement, sub voc.), which occurs also in the text of Ibn-at-Tayyib (loc. cit., 1. 362b), properly means lake. The word in the Jerusalem Lectionary means valley as well as stream. For the whole clause cf. the text of John xviii. in Die vier Evangelien, arabisch, aus der Wiener Handschrift, edited by P. de Lagarde, 1864.
3314 Luke xxii. 40a; Matt. xxvi. 36b.
3315 Luke xxii. 40b; Matt. xxvi. 37.
3316 Matt. xxvi. 38.
3318 Mark xiv. 35b.
3319 Lit. fell on his knees.
3321 Lit. let this hour pass. The Borg. ms. omits him.
3322 Mark xiv. 36a.
3323 Luke xxvi. 40a; Mark xiv. 37b.
3324 Matt. xxvi. 40b.
3325 Matt. xxvi. 41a; Matt. xiv. 38b.
3326 Lit. diseased. The Arabic word is rare in the sense required by the context (cf. Pesh.).
3327 Mark xvi. 42.
3328 This reading would perhaps more easily arise out of the Sinaitic than out of the Peshitta.
3330 Matt. xxvi. 44.
3331 Luke xxii. 43.
3332 Luke xxii. 44.
3333 cf. Peshitta. Or, And although he was afraid.
3334 The Peshitta (hardly Cur.) is capable of this interpretation.
his sweat8336 [Arabic, p. 182] became like a stream of blood, and fell on the ground. 8337 Then he rose from [19] his prayer, and came to his disciples, and found them sleeping. 8338 And he [20] said unto them, Sleep now, and rest: 8339 the end hath arrived, 8340 and the hour hath come; [21] and behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 8341 Arise, let us go: 8342 for he hath come that betrayeth me.

[22] 8343 And while he was still speaking, came Judas the betrayer, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude carrying lanterns and torches8344 and swords and staves, from the chief priests and scribes and elders of the people, and with him the footsoldiers [23] of the Romans.8345 8346 And Judas the betrayer gave them a sign, and said, He whom I shall kiss, he is he: take him with care,8347 and lead him away.8348

[24] 8349 And Jesus, because he knew everything that should come upon him, went forth [25] unto them. 8350 And immediately Judas the betrayer came to Jesus, and said, Peace, [26] my Master; and kissed him. 8351 And Jesus said unto him, Judas, with a kiss betrayest [27] thou the Son of man? 8352 Was it for that thou camest, my friend? And Jesus said [28] to those that came unto him, Whom seek ye? 8353 They said unto him, Jesus the Nazarene. Jesus said unto them, I am he. And Judas the betrayer also was standing [29] with them. 8354 And when Jesus said unto them, I am he, they retreated backward, and [30] fell to the ground. 8355 And Jesus asked them again, Whom seek ye? They answered, [31] Jesus the Nazarene. 8356 Jesus said unto them, I told you that I am he: and if ye seek [32] me, let these go away: that the word might be fulfilled which he spake, 8357 Of those [33] [Arabic, p. 183] whom thou hast given me I lost not even one. 8358 Then came those that were with Judas, and seized Jesus, and took him.

---

8336 cf. Syr., especially Peshitta.
8338 Luke xxii. 46; Matt. xxvi. 45b.
8339 Mark xiv. 41b.
8340 cf. Syr., especially Peshitta.
8341 Mark xiv. 42a; Matt. xxvi. 46b.
8342 cf. § 4, 20, note.
8343 Matt. xxvi. 47.
8344 John xviii. 3.
8345 cf. John xviii. 3 (Jerusalem Lectionary). In Syriac Romans means soldiers. The Arabic footsoldiers might be man (singular).
8346 Luke xxii. 48; Mark xiv. 44b.
8347 cf. Syriac versions. Obviously we must supply a diacritical point over the last radical, or read the middle one as dhal.
8348 Lit. him to —. Borg. ms. probably means bear him away.
8349 John xviii. 4a.
8350 Matt. xxvi. 49; Matt. xxvi. 50a.
8352 Matt. xxvi. 50b; Luke xxii. 52a, c.
8353 John xviii. 4b; John xviii. 5.
8354 John xviii. 6.
8355 John xviii. 7.
8356 John xviii. 8.
8357 John xviii. 9.
8358 Matt. xxvi. 50c.
[34] And when his disciples saw what happened, they said, Our Lord, shall we smite [35] them with swords? And Simon Cephas had a sword, and he drew it, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his right ear. And the name of that servant [36] was Malchus. Jesus said unto Cephas, The cup which my Father hath given [37] me, shall I not drink it? Put the sword into its sheath: for all that take with [38] the sword shall die by the sword.

[336] Thinkest thou that I am not able to ask of my [39] Father, and he shall now raise up for me more than twelve tribes of angels? Then [40] how should the scriptures which were spoken be fulfilled, that thus it must be? Your [41] leave in this. And he touched the ear of him that was struck, and healed it. And in that hour Jesus said to the multitudes, As they come out against a thief are ye come out against me with swords and staves to take me? Daily was I with you in [42] the temple sitting teaching, and ye took me not: but this is your hour, and the power [43] of darkness. And that was, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.

[44] Then the disciples all left him, and fled. And the footsoldiers and the officers [45] and the soldiers of the Jews seized Jesus, and came. And a certain young man [46] followed him, and he was wrapped in a towel, naked: and they seized him; so he [47] left the towel, and fled naked. Then they took Jesus, and bound him, and brought him to Annas first; because he was the father in law of Caiaphas, who was chief priest that year. And Caiaphas was he that counselled the Jews, that it was necessary that one man should die instead of the people.

[49] And Simon Cephas and one of the other disciples followed Jesus. And the chief [50] priest knew that disciple, and he entered with Jesus into the court; but Simon was standing without at the door. And that other disciple, whom the chief priest knew, [51] went out and spake unto her that kept the door, and she brought Simon in. And when the maid that kept the door saw Simon, she looked stedfastly at him, and said unto him, Art not thou also one of the disciples

---

340 John xviii. 10.
341 John xviii. 11a.
342 John xviii. 11c; Matt. xxvi. 52b.
343 Withis doubtless an accidental repetition of by (the same Arabic particle) in the next clause.
344 Matt. xxvi. 53.
345 The introductory interrogative particle may represent an original Or.
346 Vat. ms. omits than, and has more only in the margin by another hand.
347 Matt. xxvi. 54.
348 Luke xxi. 51b.
349 The phrase is awkward. The rendering is different in the text (f. 292a. cf. Lagarde, Die vier Evv.), and yet again in the comment (f. 293a) of Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary.
350 Matt. xxvi. 55.
351 Luke xxi. 53b.
352 Matt. xxvi. 56.
353 John xviii. 12a.
354 cf. § 11, 11.
355 Mark xiv. 51.
356 Lit. one.
357 Mark xiv. 52.
358 John xviii. 12b; John xviii. 13.
360 John xviii. 15.
361 John xviii. 16.
362 John xviii. 17a.
of this man, I mean Jesus the [52] Nazarene? 3383 But he denied, and said, Woman, I know him not, neither know I even [53] what thou sayest. 3384 And the servants and the soldiers rose, and made a fire in the [54] middle of the court, that they might warm themselves; for it was cold. 3385 And when [55] the fire burned up, they sat down around it. 3386 And Simon also came, and sat down with them to warm himself, that he might see the end of what should happen.

Section XLIX.

[1, 2] 3387 And the chief priest asked Jesus about his disciples, and about his doctrine. 3388 And Jesus said unto him, I was speaking openly to the people; and I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, where all the Jews gather; and I have spoken nothing in [3] [Arabic, p. 185] secret. 3390 Why askest thou me? ask those that have heard, what I spake unto [4] them: for they know all that I said. 3392 And when he had said that, one of the soldiers which were standing there struck the cheek of Jesus, and said unto him, [5] Dost thou thus answer the chief priest? 3394 Jesus answered and said unto him, If I [6] have spoken evil, bear witness of evil; but if well, why didst thou smite me? 3396 And Annas sent Jesus bound unto Caiaphas the chief priest.

[7] 3397 And when Jesus went out, Simon Cephas was standing in the outer court warming [8] himself. 3398 And that maid saw him again, and began to say to those that stood [9] by, This man also was there with Jesus the Nazarene. 3399 And those that stood [10] came forward and said to Cephas, Truly thou art one of his disciples. 3400 And he [11] denied again with an oath, I know not the man. 3401 And after a little one of the servants of the chief priest, the kinsman of him whose ear Simon cut off, saw him; and [12] he disputed and said, Truly this man was with him: 3403 and he also is a Galilæan; [13] and his speech resembles. 3404 3405 And he said unto Simon, Did not I see thee...
Then began Simon to curse,\textsuperscript{3406} and to swear, I know not this man [15] whom ye have mentioned. \textsuperscript{3407} And immediately, while he was speaking, the cock crew [16] twice. \textsuperscript{3409} And in that hour Jesus turned, he being without, and looked stedfastly at Cephas. And Simon remembered the word of our Lord, which he said unto him, [17, 18] \textsuperscript{3410} Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. \textsuperscript{3411} And Simon went forth without, and wept bitterly.

[19] [Arabic, p. 186] \textsuperscript{3412} And when the morning approached, the servants of all the chief priests and the scribes and the elders of the people and all the multitude assembled, [20, 21] and made a plot; \textsuperscript{3413} and they took counsel against Jesus to put him to death. \textsuperscript{3414} And they sought false witnesses who should witness against him, that they might put him to [22, 23] death, and they found not; \textsuperscript{3415} but many false witnesses came, \textsuperscript{3416} but their witness did not [24, 25] agree. \textsuperscript{3417} But at last there came two lying witnesses, \textsuperscript{3418} and said, We heard him say, I will destroy this\textsuperscript{3419} temple of God that is made with hands, and will build another not [26, 27] made with hands after three days. \textsuperscript{3420} And not even so did their witness agree. But Jesus was silent. \textsuperscript{3421} And the chief priest rose in the midst, and asked Jesus, and said, [28] \textsuperscript{3422} Answerest thou not a word concerning anything? what do these\textsuperscript{3423} witness against [29, 30] thee? \textsuperscript{3424} But Jesus was silent, and answered him nothing. \textsuperscript{3425} And they took him up [31] into their assembly, \textsuperscript{3426} and said unto him, If thou art the Messiah, tell us. \textsuperscript{3427} He said [32] unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe me: \textsuperscript{3428} and if I ask you, ye will not answer [33] me a word, nor let me go. \textsuperscript{3429} And the chief priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou art the Messiah, the [34, 35] Son of the living God. \textsuperscript{3430} Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said that I am he. \textsuperscript{3431} They all said unto him, Then thou art now the Son of God? Jesus said, Ye have said [36] that I am he. \textsuperscript{3432} I say unto you, that henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting [37] [Arabic, p. 187] at the right hand of power, and coming on

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textsuperscript{3406} Mark xiv. 71.
  \item \textsuperscript{3407} Borg. ms., by adding diacritical points, gets asserted.
  \item \textsuperscript{3408} Luke xxii. 60b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3409} Luke xxii. 61a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3410} Mark xiv. 30b, c.
  \item \textsuperscript{3411} Luke xxii. 62.
  \item \textsuperscript{3412} Luke xxii. 66a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3413} Matt. xxvii. 1b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3414} Matt. xxvi. 59b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3415} Matt. xxvi. 60a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3416} Mark xiv. 59.
  \item \textsuperscript{3417} Matt. xxvi. 60b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3418} Mark xiv. 57b; Mark xiv. 58.
  \item \textsuperscript{3419} Syriac order, but not in agreement with the versions.
  \item \textsuperscript{3420} Mark xiv. 59; Matt. xxvi. 63a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3421} Mark xiv. 60a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3422} Matt. xxvi. 62b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3423} Vat. ms. has anything, when these.
  \item \textsuperscript{3424} Mark xiv. 61a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3425} Luke xxii. 66b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3426} The word usually means synagogue in this work.
  \item \textsuperscript{3427} Luke xxii. 67.
  \item \textsuperscript{3428} Luke xxii. 68.
  \item \textsuperscript{3429} Matt. xxvi. 63b.
  \item \textsuperscript{3430} Matt. xxvi. 64a.
  \item \textsuperscript{3431} Luke xxii. 70.
  \item \textsuperscript{3432} Matt. xxvi. 64b.
\end{itemize}
the clouds of heaven. Then the [38] chief priest rent his tunic, and said, He hath blasphemed. Then the all said, Why should we seek now witnesses? we have heard now the blasphemy from his mouth. [39, 40] What then think ye? They all answered and said, He is worthy of death. Then some of them drew near, and spat in his face, and struck him, and scoffed at him. [41] And the soldiers struck him on his cheeks, and said, Prophesy unto us, thou Messiah: [42] who is he that struck thee? And many other things spake they falsely, and said against him.

[43] And all of their assembly arose, and took Jesus, and brought him bound to the prætorium, and delivered him up to Pilate the judge; but they entered not into the prætorium, that they might not be defiled when they should eat the passover.

[45] And Jesus stood before the judge. And Pilate went forth unto them without, and said unto them, What accusation have ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If he had not been doing evils, neither should we have delivered him up unto thee. We found this man leading our people astray, and restraining from giving tribute to Cæsar, and saying of himself that he is the King, the Messiah. [48] Pilate said unto them, Then take ye him, and judge him according to your law. [Arabic, p. 188] The Jews said unto him, We have no authority to put a man to death: [49] that the word might be fulfilled, which Jesus spake, when he made known by what manner of death he was to die.

[50] And Pilate entered into the prætorium, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus said unto him, Of thyself sayst thou this, or did others tell it thee concerning me? Pilate said unto him, Am I, forsooth, a Jew? The sons of thy nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? Jesus said unto him, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: now my kingdom is not from hence.

3437 Then the chief priest rent his tunic, and said, He hath blasphemed. And they all said, Why should we seek now witnesses? we have heard now the blasphemy from his mouth. [39, 40] What then think ye? They all answered and said, He is worthy of death. Then some of them drew near, and spat in his face, and struck him, and scoffed at him. [41] And the soldiers struck him on his cheeks, and said, Prophesy unto us, thou Messiah: who is he that struck thee? And many other things spake they falsely, and said against him.

[43] And all of their assembly arose, and took Jesus, and brought him bound to the prætorium, and delivered him up to Pilate the judge; but they entered not into the prætorium, that they might not be defiled when they should eat the passover.

[45] And Jesus stood before the judge. And Pilate went forth unto them without, and said unto them, What accusation have ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If he had not been doing evils, neither should we have delivered him up unto thee. We found this man leading our people astray, and restraining from giving tribute to Cæsar, and saying of himself that he is the King, the Messiah. [48] Pilate said unto them, Then take ye him, and judge him according to your law. [Arabic, p. 188] The Jews said unto him, We have no authority to put a man to death: that the word might be fulfilled, which Jesus spake, when he made known by what manner of death he was to die.

[50] And Pilate entered into the prætorium, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus said unto him, Of thyself sayst thou this, or did others tell it thee concerning me? Pilate said unto him, Am I, forsooth, a Jew? The sons of thy nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? Jesus said unto him, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: now my kingdom is not from hence.

3433 Mark xiv. 63a; Matt. xxvi. 65b.
3434 The foreign word used in the Peshitta is preserved. The Sinaitic uses a Syriac word meaning garment.
3436 Mark xiv. 64b; Matt. xxvi. 66.
3437 Mark xiv. 65a; Luke xxii. 63b.
3438 Mark xiv. 65c; Matt. xxvi. 68.
3439 See § 9, 7, note.
3440 Luke xxii. 65.
3441 See § 7, 17, note.
3442 John xviii. 28; Mark xv. 1b.
3444 cf. Matt. xxvii. 2; Mark xv. 1.
3445 Arabic, diwdn.
3446 John xvii. 28c.
3447 Matt. xxvii. 11a; John xviii. 29.
3448 Lit. plea.
3449 John xviii. 30.
3450 Luke xxii. 2b.
3451 John xviii. 31.
3452 John xviii. 32.
3453 John xviii. 33.
3454 John xviii. 34.
3455 John xviii. 35.
3456 See § 4, 24, note.
3457 The Syriac word.
3458 John xviii. 36.
Pilate said unto him, Then thou art a king? Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said that I am a king. And for this was I born, and for this came I into the world, that I should bear witness [55] of the truth. And every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. Pilate said unto him, And what is the truth? And when he said that, he went out again unto the Jews.

Section L.

[1] And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitude, I have not found [2] against this man anything. But they cried out and said, He hath disquieted our people with his teaching in all Judæa, and he began from Galilee and unto this [3] place. And Pilate, when he heard the name of Galilee, asked, Is this man a Galilean? And when he learned that he was under the jurisdiction of Herod, he sent him to Herod: for he was in Jerusalem in those days.

[5] And Herod, when he saw Jesus, rejoiced exceedingly: for he had desired to see him for a long time, because he had heard regarding him many things; and he counted [6] seeing some sign from him. And he questioned him with many words; but [7] Jesus answered him not a word. And the scribes and chief priests were [8] standing by, and they accused him vehemently. And Herod scoffed at him, he and his servants; and when he had scoffed at him, he clothed him in robes of scarlet, [9] and sent him to Pilate. And on that day Pilate and Herod became friends, there having been enmity between them before that.

[10, 11] And Pilate called the chief priests and the rulers of the people, and said unto them, Ye brought unto me this man, as the perverter of your people: and I have tried him before you, and have not found in this man any cause of all that ye seek against him: nor yet Herod: for I sent him unto him; and he hath done nothing for which he should deserve death.

3459 John xviii. 37.
3460 John xviii. 38a.
3462 Luke xxiii. 5.
3463 Or, led astray (cf. § 25, 17, note).
3464 cf. Syriac versions.
3468 Same word as in § 10, 16 (see note there).
3471 Luke xxiii. 11.
3473 Lit. and there was.
3476 The Arabic word may also, like the Syriac, mean thing, but hardly, as that does here, fault or crime. The Vat. ms., pointing differently, reads thing. The same confusion occurs at § 40, 35 (cf. a converse case in § 25, 40).
3477 So Ciasca’s text, following the Borg. ms. The Vat. ms. has plotted, which is nearer the Syriac accuse.
3478 Luke xxiii. 15.
3479 So now I will chastise him, and let [14, 15] him go. 3480 The multitude all cried out and said, Take him from us, take him. 3481 And [16] the chief priests and the elders accused him of many things. 3482 And during their [17] accusation he answered not a word. 3483 Then Pilate said unto him, Hearest thou not [18] how many things they witness against thee? 3484 And he answered him not, not even one word: and Pilate marvelled at that.

[19] 3485 And when the judge sat on his tribune, his wife sent unto him, and said unto him, See that thou have nothing to do with that righteous man: for I have suffered much in my dream to-day because of him.

[20] 3487 And at every feast the custom of the judge was to release the people one [21] prisoner, him whom they would. 3488 And there was in their prison a well-known prisoner, [22, 23] called Barabbas. 3489 And when they assembled, Pilate said unto them, 3490 Ye have a custom, that I should release unto you a prisoner at the passover: will ye that I [24] release unto you the King of the Jews? 3491 And they all cried out and said, Release not [Arabic, p. 190] unto us this man, but release unto us Barabbas. And this Barabbas was a [25] robber, 3492 who for sedition and murder, which was in the city, was cast into the [26] prison. 3493 And all the people cried out and began to ask him to do as the custom was [27] that he should do with them. 3494 And Pilate answered and said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called the Messiah, the [28] King of the Jews? 3495 For Pilate knew that envy had moved them to deliver him up. [29] 3496 And the chief priests and the elders asked the multitudes to deliver Barabbas, and [30] to destroy Jesus. 3497 The judge answered and said unto them, Whom of the two will [31] ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas. 3498 Pilate said unto them, And [32] Jesus which is called the Messiah, what shall I do with him? 3500 They all cried out [33] and said, Crucify him. 3501 And Pilate spake to them again, for he desired to release [34] Jesus; 3502 but they cried out and said, Crucify him, crucify him,
and release unto us [35] Barabbas. 3503 And Pilate said unto them a third time, What evil hath this man done? I have not found in him any cause 3504 to necessitate death: I will chastise him and [36] let him go. 3505 But they increased in importunity 3506 with a loud voice, and asked him to crucify him. And their voice, and the voice of the chief priests, prevailed. [37] 3507 Then Pilate released unto them that one who was cast into prison for sedition and murder, Barabbas, whom they asked for: 3508 and he scourged Jesus with whips. 3509

[38] 3510 Then the footsoldiers of the judge took Jesus, and went into the praetorium, and [39] [Arabic, p. 191] gathered unto him all of the footsoldiers. 3511 And they stripped him, and put on [40] him a scarlet cloak. 3512 And they clothed him in garments of purple, and plaited [41] a crown of thorns, and placed it on his head, and a reed in his right hand; 3513 and while they mocked at him and laughed, they fell down on their knees before him, and bowed [42] down to him, and said, Hail, 3515 King of the Jews! 3516 And they spat in his face, and took the reed from his hand, and struck him on his head, 3517 and smote his cheeks. [43] 3518 And Pilate went forth without again, and said unto the Jews, I bring him forth to [44] you, that ye may know that I do not find, in examining [3519] him, even one crime. 3520 3521 And Jesus went forth without, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple garments. [45] 3522 Pilate said unto them, Behold, the man! And when the chief priests and the soldiers 3523 saw him, they cried out and said, Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate said unto them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I find not a cause [46] against him. 3525 The Jews said unto him, We have a law, and according to our law he deserves [47] death, because he made himself the Son of God. 3526 And when Pilate heard this word, [48] his fear increased, 3527 and he entered

3903 Luke xxiii. 22.
3904 Our translator has retained the Syriac word, which in this context means fault (see § 50, 11, note).
3906 The word used in Vat ms. means a repeated charge or attack. That in Borg. ms. is probably used in the post-classical sense of importuning him. Either word might be written by a copyist for the other. The same double reading probably occurs again at § 53, 55.
3907 Mark xv. 15a; Luke xxiii. 25a.
3908 Matt. xxvii. 26b.
3909 cf. Syriac versions.
3910 Matt. xxvii. 27.
3911 Matt. xxvii. 28.
3912 John xix. 2.
3913 Matt. xxvii. 29b.
3914 This may be a mere clerical error (very natural in Arabic) for scoffed at, the reading of the Syriac versions. This being so, it is worthy of remark that the reading is apparently common to the two mss. The Syriac words are, however, also somewhat similar. The Jerusalem Lectionary has a word agreeing with the text above.
3915 Lit. Peace.
3916 Matt. xxvii. 30.
3917 John xix. 3b.
3918 John xix. 4.
3919 This reading may be a corruption of a very literal rendering of the Peshitta.
3920 cf. § 50, 11.
3921 John xix. 5.
3922 John xix. 6.
3923 cf. § 11, 11, note.
3924 See § 50, 35, note.
3925 John xix. 7.
3926 John xix. 8.
3927 John xix. 9.
again into the porch, and said to Jesus, Whence [49] art thou? But Jesus answered him not a word. Pilate said unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have authority to release thee, and have [50] authority to crucify thee? Jesus said unto him, Thou hast not any authority over me, if thou wert not given it from above: therefore the sin of him that delivered [51] me up unto thee is greater than thy sin. And for this word Pilate wished to release him: but the Jews cried out, If thou let him go, thou art not a friend of Caesar: for every one that maketh himself a king is against Caesar.

Section LI.

[1] [Arabic, p. 192] And when Pilate heard this saying, he took Jesus out, and sat on the tribune in the place which was called the pavement of stones, but in the Hebrew [2] called Gabbatha. And that day was the Friday of the passover: and it had reached [3] about the sixth hour. And he said to the Jews, Behold, your King! And they cried out, Take him, take him, crucify him, crucify him. Pilate said unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests said unto him, We have no king except [4] Cæsar. And Pilate, when he saw [5] it, and he was gaining nothing, but the tumult was increasing, took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, and said, I [6] am innocent of the blood of this innocent man: ye shall know. And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. Then Pilate commanded to grant them their request; and delivered up Jesus to be crucified, according to their wish.

[7] Then Judas the betrayer, when he saw Jesus wronged, went and returned the [8] thirty pieces of money to the chief priests and the elders, and said, I have sinned in my betraying innocent blood. And they said unto him, And we, what must we do? [9] know thou. And he threw down the money in the temple, and departed; and he [10] went away and hanged himself. And the chief priests took the money, and said, We have not authority to cast it into the place
of the offering

And they took counsel, and bought with it the plain of the potter, for [12] the burial of strangers.  

Therefore that plain was called, The field of blood, unto [13] [Arabic, p. 193] this day.  

Therein was fulfilled the saying in the prophet which said, I took thirty pieces of money, the price of the precious one, which was fixed [14] by the children of Israel;  

and I paid them for the plain of the potter, as the Lord commanded me.  

And the Jews took Jesus, and went away to crucify him.  

And when he bare his [16] cross and went out, they stripped him of those purple and scarlet garments which he [17] had on, and put on him his own garments.  

And while they were going with him, they found a man, a Cyrenian, coming from the country, named Simon, the father of Alexander and Rufus:  

and they compelled this man to bear the cross of Jesus.  

And they took the cross and laid it upon him, that he might bear it, and come after Jesus; and Jesus went, and his cross behind him.  

And there followed him much people, and women which were lamenting and [20] raving.  

But Jesus turned unto them and said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not [21] for me: weep for yourselves, and for your children.  

Days are coming, when they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that bare not, and the breasts [22] that gave not suck.  

Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and [23] to the hills, Cover us.  

For if they do so in the green tree, what shall be in the dry?  

And they brought with Jesus two others of the malefactors, to be put to death.  

And when they came unto a certain place called The skull, and called in the Hebrew Golgotha, they crucified him there:  

they crucified with him these two [26] malefactors, one on his right, and the other on his left.  

And the scripture was [27] [Arabic, p. 194] fulfilled, which saith, He was numbered with the transgressors.  

And they gave him to drink wine and myrrh, and vinegar which had been mixed with the myrrh;  

and he tasted, and would not drink; and he received it not.

---

3548 cf. § 32, 15, note.  
3549 Matt. xxvii. 7.  
3550 Matt. xxvii. 8.  
3551 Matt. xxvii. 9.  
3552 Or, at that (time).  
3553 Matt. xxvii. 10.  
3554 John xix. 16b; Mark xv. 20b.  
3555 John xix. 17a; Matt. xxvii. 31b.  
3556 Matt. xxvii. 32a; Mark xv. 21b.  
3557 Matt. xxvii. 32b.  
3559 Luke xxiii. 27.  
3560 Lit. being burned. The text is probably corrupt.  
3565 Lit. wood (cf. Syr. and Greek).  
3566 Luke xxiii. 32.  
3567 Or, others, malefactors.  
3568 Luke xxiii. 33a; John xix. 17c.  
3569 Luke xxiii. 33b.  
3570 Mark xv. 28.  
3571 Mark xv. 23a.  
3572 Matt. xxvii. 34b; Mark xv. 23b.
[28] And the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and cast lots for them in four parts, to every party of the soldiers a part; and his tunic was [29] without sewing, from the top woven throughout. And they said one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: and the scripture was fulfilled, which saith,

They divided my garments among them,
And cast the lot for my vesture.

[30, 31] This the soldiers did. And they sat and guarded him there. And Pilate wrote on a tablet the cause of his death, and put it on the wood of the cross above his head: And there was written upon it thus: THIS IS JESUS THE NAZARENE, THE KING OF THE JEWS. And this tablet read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city: and it was written in Hebrew and Greek and Latin. And the chief priests said unto Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, He it is [34] that said, I am the King of the Jews. Pilate said unto them, What hath been written hath been written. And the people were standing beholding; and they that passed by were reviling him, and shaking their heads, and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself if thou art the Son of God, and come down from the cross. And in like manner the chief priests and the [Arabic, p. 195] scribes and the elders and the Pharisees derided him, and laughed one with another, and said, The saviour of others cannot save himself. If he is the Messiah, the chosen of God, and the King of Israel, let him come down now from the cross, that we may see, and believe in him. He that relieth on God—let him deliver him [41] now, if he is pleased with him: for he said, I am the Son of God. And the soldiers [42] also scoffed at him in that they came near unto

3575 John xix. 23.
3576 John xix. 24.
3577 Matt. xxvii. 36.
3578 John xix. 19.
3579 Matt. xxvii. 37.
3580 John xix. 20.
3581 A different word from that in the preceding verse; in each case, the word used in the Peshitta (Cur. and Sin. lacking).
3582 John xix. 21.
3583 The Syriac words, retained in Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary (f. 366a), seem to have been transposed. Vat. ms. omits he, probably meaning but that he said.
3584 In a carelessly written Arabic ms. there is almost no difference between hath been written and I have written, as it is in Ibn-at-Tayyib (loc. cit., f. 366a).
3586 cf. § 7, 17, note. Borg. ms. has jesting at.
3587 The Arabic text has deriding (cf. § 51, 37). Either with is accidentally omitted, or, more probably, we should correct the spelling to shaking (cf. Syriac versions).
3588 Matt. xxvii. 40a; Mark xv. 29.
3589 Matt. xxvii. 40c.
3590 Matt. xxvii. 41.
3591 Matt. xxvii. 42a.
3592 Luke xxiii. 35c; Matt. xxvii. 42c.
3593 Verse 37 or Mt.
3594 Matt. xxvii. 43.
3595 Luke xxiii. 36.
him, \( ^3595 \) and brought him vinegar, and [43] said unto him, If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself. \( ^3596 \) And likewise the two robbers\(^3597 \) also that were crucified with him reproached him.

[44] \( ^3598 \) And one of those two malefactors who were crucified with him reviled him, and [45] said, If thou art the Messiah, save thyself, and save us also. \( ^3599 \) But his comrade rebuked him, and said, Dost thou not even fear God, being thyself also in this [46] condemnation? \( ^3600 \) And we with justice, and as we deserved, and according to our deed,\(^3601 \) have we been rewarded: but this \textit{man} hath not done anything unlawful. \( ^47 \) \( ^3602 \) And he said unto Jesus, Remember me, my Lord, when thou comest in thy kingdom. \( ^48 \) \( ^3603 \) Jesus said unto him, Verily\(^3604 \) I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

[49] \( ^3605 \) And there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother’s sister,\(^3606 \) [50] Mary\(^3607 \) that was related to Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. \( ^3608 \) And Jesus saw his mother, and that disciple whom he loved standing \textit{by}; and he said to his mother, [51] Woman, behold, thy son! \( ^3609 \) And he said to that disciple, Behold, thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto himself.

[52] [Arabic, p. 196] \( ^3610 \) And from the sixth hour\(^3611 \) darkness was on all the land unto the ninth \[53] hour,\(^3612 \) and the sun became dark. \( ^3613 \) And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, and said, \textit{Yail}, \textit{Yaili},\(^3614 \) why hast thou forsaken me? which\(^3615 \) \textit{is}, My \textit{God}, my \textit{God}, why hast thou forsaken me? \( ^3616 \) And some of those that stood there, when they heard, said, This \textit{man} called Elijah.

Section LII.

\( ^3595 \) Luke xxiii. 37.
\( ^3596 \) Matt. xxvii. 44.
\( ^3597 \) Borg. ms. has \textit{boys} (an easy clerical error).
\( ^3599 \) Luke xxiii. 40.
\( ^3600 \) Luke xxiii. 41.
\( ^3601 \) Our \textit{deed} might be read \textit{we have done}, and perhaps our translator’s style would justify our writing \textit{as for to}.
\( ^3602 \) Luke xxiii. 42.
\( ^3603 \) Luke xxiii. 43.
\( ^3604 \) Borg. ms. has \textit{Verily}, \textit{verily}.
\( ^3605 \) John xix. 25.
\( ^3606 \) A single word in Arabic.
\( ^3607 \) Vat. ms. has \textit{and Mary}.
\( ^3608 \) John xix. 26.
\( ^3609 \) John xix. 27.
\( ^3610 \) Matt. xxvii. 45a; Luke xxiii. 44b.
\( ^3611 \) Lit \textit{six hours and nine hours} respectively.
\( ^3612 \) Lit \textit{six hours and nine hours} respectively.
\( ^3613 \) Luke xxiii. 45a; Mark xv. 34.
\( ^3614 \) In Vat. ms. the second word is like the first. The syllable \textit{Ya} doubtless is the Arabic interjection \textit{O!}
\( ^3615 \) The Borg. ms. omits from \textit{which to me}.
\( ^3616 \) Matt. xxvii. 47.
\( ^3617 \) Borg. ms. omits \textit{when they}, and has \textit{and said}.
[1] 3618 And after that, Jesus knew that all things were finished; and that the scripture [2] might be accomplished, he said, I thirst. 3619 And there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and in that hour one of them hasted, and took a sponge, and filled it with that [3] vinegar, 3620 and fastened it on a reed, and brought it near 3621 his mouth to give him a [4] drink. 3622 And when Jesus had taken that vinegar, he said, Everything is finished. 5 3623 But the rest said, Let be, that we may see whether Elijah cometh to save him. [6, 7] 3625 And Jesus said, My Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And Jesus cried again with a loud voice, and said, My Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit. 3626 He said that, and bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

[8] 3627 And immediately the face of 3629 the door of the temple was rent into two parts from [9] top to bottom; 3630 and the earth was shaken; and the stones were split to pieces; and the [Arabic, p. 197] tombs were opened; and the bodies of many saints which slept, came forth, and 3631 came together to the sight, when they saw what came to pass, returned and smote upon their breasts.

[10] 3632 And the Jews, because of the Friday, said, Let these bodies not remain on their crosses; 3633 because it is the morning of the sabbath (for that sabbath was a great day); and they asked of Pilate that they might break the legs of those that were [15] crucified, and take them down. 3634 And the soldiers came, and brake the legs of the [16] first, and that other which was crucified with him:

3635 but when they came to Jesus, [17] they saw that he had died before, so they brake not his legs:

3636 but one of the soldiers pierced 3641 him in his side with a spear, and immediately there came forth

---

John xix. 28.
John xix. 29a; Matt. xxvii. 48.
Mark xv. 36b.
cf. § 12, 13, note.
John xix. 30a.
Matt. xxvii. 49; Luke xxiii. 34.
Or, Let us.
Lit. lay down.
John xix. 30b.
Matt. xxvii. 51.
cf. Syriac versions and Ibn-at-Tayyib’s Commentary. Vat. ms. omits the face of.
Matt. xxvii. 52.
Matt. xxvii. 53.
Matt. xxvii. 54.
This sentence is a good example of word-for-word translation of the Peshitta.
Luke xxiii. 47b; Matt. xxvii. 54b.
John xix. 31.
The word is probably plural.
John xix. 32.
John xix. 33.
John xix. 34.
Lit. ripped.
blood and [18] water.  

3642 And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he [19] knoweth that he hath said the truth, that ye also may believe.  

3643 This he did, that [20] the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, A bone shall not be broken in him;  

3644 and the scripture also which saith, Let them look upon him whom they pierced.  

3645 [21] And there were in the distance all the acquaintance of Jesus standing, and the women that came with him from Galilee, those that followed him and ministered.  

3646 One of them was Mary Magdalene; and Mary the mother of James the little and [22] Joses,  

3647 and the mother of the sons of Zebedee, and Salome, and many others which came up with him unto Jerusalem;  

3648 and they saw that.  

3649 And when the evening of the Friday was come, because of the entering of the [25] sabbath,  

3650 there came a rich man,  

3651 a noble of Ramah, a city of Judah, named Joseph, and he was a good man and upright;  

3652 and he was a disciple of Jesus, but [26] was concealing himself for fear of the Jews.  

3653 And he did not agree with the accusers [27] in their desire and their deeds:  

3654 and he was looking for the kingdom of God.  

3655 And this man went boldly, and entered in unto Pilate, and asked of him the body of [28] Jesus.  

3656 And Pilate wondered how he had died already: and he called the officer of [29] the footsoldiers, and asked him concerning his death before the time.  

3657 And when [30] he knew, he commanded him to deliver up his body unto Joseph.  

3658 And Joseph bought for him a winding cloth of pure linen, and took down the body of Jesus, [31] and wound it in it; and they came and took it.  

3659 And there came unto him Nicodemus also, who of old came unto Jesus by night; and he brought with him perfume [32] of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds.  

3660 And they took the body of Jesus, and wound it in the linen and the perfume, as was the custom of the Jews to bury.

---

3642 John xix. 35.  
3643 John xix. 36.  
3644 John xix. 37.  
3645 Lit. *ripped*.  
3646 Luke xxiii. 49a; Mark xv. 41b.  
3647 Matt. xxvii. 56a; Mark xv. 40b.  
3648 Matt. xxvii. 56c; Mark xv. 40c, 41c.  
3649 Luke xxi. 49b.  
3650 Mark xv. 42.  
3652 Matt. xxvii. 57.  
3653 Borg. ms. omits.  
3655 Syriac versions.  
3656 John xix. 38b.  
3657 Lit. *the*.  
3659 Luke xxiii. 51c.  
3660 Mark xv. 43b.  
3661 Mark xv. 44.  
3662 Mark xv. 45a.  
3663 Matt. xxvii. 58b; Mark xv. 46a.  
3664 John xix. 38d; John xix. 39.  
3665 The preparation used in embalming.  
3666 John xix. 40.
And there was in the place where Jesus was crucified a garden; and in that garden a new tomb cut out in a rock, wherein was never man yet laid. And they left Jesus there because the sabbath had come in, and because the tomb was near. And they pushed a great stone, and thrust it against the door of the sepulchre, and went away. And Mary Magdalene and Mary that was related to Joses came to the sepulchre after them, and sat opposite the sepulchre, and saw the body, how they took it in and laid it there. And they returned, and bought ointment and perfume, and prepared it, that they might come and anoint him. And on the day which was the sabbath day they desisted according to the command.

And the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered unto Pilate, and said unto him, Our lord, we remember that that misleader said, while he was alive, After three days I rise. And now send beforehand and guard the tomb lest his disciples come and steal him by night, and they will say unto the people that he is risen from the dead: and the last error shall be worse than the first. He said unto them, And have ye not guards? go, and take precautions as ye know how. And they went, and set guards at the tomb, and sealed that stone, with the guards.

And in the evening of the sabbath, which is the morning of the first day, and in the dawning while the darkness yet remained, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary and other women to see the tomb. They brought with them the perfume which they had prepared,

---

3667 And there was in the place where Jesus was crucified a garden; and in that garden a new tomb cut out in a rock, wherein was never man yet laid. And they left Jesus there because the sabbath had come in, and because the tomb was near. And they pushed a great stone, and thrust it against the door of the sepulchre, and went away. And Mary Magdalene and Mary that was related to Joses came to the sepulchre after them, and sat opposite the sepulchre, and saw the body, how they took it in and laid it there. And they returned, and bought ointment and perfume, and prepared it, that they might come and anoint him. And on the day which was the sabbath day they desisted according to the command.

3682 And the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered unto Pilate, and said unto him, Our lord, we remember that that misleader said, while he was alive, After three days I rise. And now send beforehand and guard the tomb until the third day, lest his disciples come and steal him by night, and they will say unto the people that he is risen from the dead: and the last error shall be worse than the first. He said unto them, And have ye not guards? go, and take precautions as ye know how. And they went, and set guards at the tomb, and sealed that stone, with the guards.

3690 And in the evening of the sabbath, which is the morning of the first day, and in the dawning while the darkness yet remained, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary and other women to see the tomb. They brought with them the perfume which they had prepared,
and said among themselves, \textsuperscript{3693}Who is it that will [48] remove for us the stone from the door of the tomb? for it was very great. \textsuperscript{3694}And when they said thus, there occurred a great earthquake; and an angel came down \textsuperscript{49} from heaven, and came and removed the stone from the door. \textsuperscript{3695}And they came and found the stone removed from the sepulchre, and the angel sitting upon the \textsuperscript{50} stone. \textsuperscript{3696}And his appearance was as the lightning, and his raiment white as the [51] snow: \textsuperscript{3697}and for fear of him the guards were troubled, and became as dead men. \textsuperscript{52} \textsuperscript{3698}And when he went away, the women entered into the sepulchre; and they found [53] [Arabic, p. 200] not the body of Jesus. \textsuperscript{3699}And they saw there a young man sitting on the [54] right, arrayed in a white garment; and they were amazed. \textsuperscript{3700} \textsuperscript{3701}And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear ye not: for I know that ye seek Jesus the [55] Nazarene, who hath been crucified. He is not here; but he is risen, as he said. \textsuperscript{3702}Come and see the place where our Lord lay.

\section*{Section LIII.\textsuperscript{3703}}

\textsuperscript{[1]} \textsuperscript{3704}And while they marvelled at that, behold, two men standing above them, their [2] raiment shining: \textsuperscript{3705}and they were seized with fright, and bowed down their face to [3] the earth: and they said unto them, Why seek ye the living \textit{one} with the dead? \textsuperscript{3706}He is not here; he is risen: remember what he was speaking unto you while he was in [4] Galilee, and saying, \textsuperscript{3707}The Son of man is to be delivered up into the hands of sinners, [5] and to be crucified, and on the third day to rise. \textsuperscript{3708}But go in haste, and say to his disciples and to Cephas, He is risen from among the dead; and lo, he goeth before [6] you into Galilee; \textsuperscript{3709}and there ye shall see him, where\textsuperscript{3710} he said unto you: lo, I have [7] told you. \textsuperscript{3711}And they remembered his sayings; and they departed in haste from the [8] tomb with joy and great fear, and hastened and went; \textsuperscript{3712}and perplexity and fear [9] encompassed

\footnotesize{
\begin{tabular}{l}
\textsuperscript{3693} Mark xvi. 3. \\
\textsuperscript{3694} Mark xvi. 4b; Matt. xxviii. 2a. \\
\textsuperscript{3695} Luke xxiv. 2; Matt. xxviii. 2b. \\
\textsuperscript{3696} Matt. xxviii. 3. \\
\textsuperscript{3697} Matt. xxviii. 4. \\
\textsuperscript{3698} Luke xxiv. 3. \\
\textsuperscript{3699} Mark xvi. 5b. \\
\textsuperscript{3700} The diacritical points of the first letter must be corrected. \\
\textsuperscript{3701} Matt. xxviii. 5. \\
\textsuperscript{3702} Matt. xxviii. 6. \\
\textsuperscript{3703} The Borg. MS. indicates the beginning of the sections, not by titles, but by \textit{"vittas ampliusculas auroque oblinitas"} (Ciasca, Introduction). Ciasca indicates in the Corrigenda, opposite p. 210 of the Arabic text, where this section should begin. \\
\textsuperscript{3704} Luke xxiv. 4. \\
\textsuperscript{3705} Luke xxiv. 5. \\
\textsuperscript{3706} Luke xxiv. 6. \\
\textsuperscript{3707} Luke xxiv. 7. \\
\textsuperscript{3708} Matt. xxviii. 7a. \\
\textsuperscript{3709} Mark xvi. 7b; Matt. xxviii. 7c. \\
\textsuperscript{3710} Possibly the translator’s style would warrant the translation \textit{as}. \\
\textsuperscript{3711} Luke xxiv. 8; Matt. xxviii. 8a. \\
\textsuperscript{3712} Mark xvi. 8b.
\end{tabular}
}
them; and they told no man anything, for they were afraid. 3713 And Mary hastened, and came to Simon Cephas, and to that other disciple whom Jesus loved, and said unto them, They have taken our Lord from the sepulchre, and I [10] know not where they have laid him. 3714 And Simon went out, and that other disciple, [11] and came to the sepulchre. 3715 And they hastened both together: and that disciple [12] outran Simon, and came first to the sepulchre; 3717 and he looked down, and saw the [13] linen laid; but he went not in. 3718 And Simon came after him, and entered into the [14] sepulchre, and saw the linen laid; 3719 and the scarf with which his head was bound was not with the linen, but wrapped and laid aside in a certain place. [15] 3720 Then entered that disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and saw, and believed. [16] 3721 And they knew not yet from the scriptures that the Messiah was to rise from among [17] the dead. 3722 And those two disciples went to their place.

[18] 3723 But Mary remained3724 at the tomb weeping: and while she wept, she looked [19] down into the tomb; 3725 and she saw two angels sitting in white raiment, one of them toward his pillow, and the other toward his feet, where the body of Jesus had been [20] laid. 3726 And they said unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She said unto them, [21] They have taken my Lord, and I know not where they have left him. 3727 She said that, and turned behind her, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was [22] Jesus. 3728 Jesus said unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? And she supposed3729 him to be the gardener, and said, My lord, if thou hast taken him, [23] tell me where thou hast laid him, that I may go and take him. 3730 Jesus said unto her, Mary. She turned, and said unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is, being [24] interpreted, Teacher. 3731 Jesus said unto her, Touch me not;3732 for I have not ascended yet unto my Father: go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God.

[25] 3733 And on the First-day on which he rose, he appeared first unto Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons.
[26] 3734 And some of those guards 3735 came to the city, and informed the chief priests of [27] [Arabic, p. 202] all that had happened. 3736 And they assembled with the elders, and took [28] counsel; 3737 and they gave money, not a little, to the guards, and said unto them, Say ye, His disciples came and stole him by night, while we were sleeping.

[29] 3738 And if the judge hear that, we will make a plea with him, and free you of blame. 3739 And they, when they took the money, did according to what they taught them. And this word spread among the Jews unto this day.

[31] 3740 And then came Mary Magdalene, and announced to the disciples that she had seen our Lord, and that he had said that unto her.

[32] 3741 And while the first 3742 women 3743 were going in the way to inform 3744 his disciples, 3745 [33] Jesus met them, and said unto them, Peace unto you. 3746 And they came and took [34] hold of his feet, and worshipped him. 3747 Then said Jesus unto them, Fear not: but go and say to my brethren that they depart into Galilee, and there they shall see [35] me. 3748 And those women returned, and told all that to the eleven, and to the rest of the disciples; 3749 and to those that had been with him, for they were saddened and [36] weeping. 3750 And those were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and the rest who were with them: and they were those that told the apostles. [37] 3751 And they, when they heard them say that he was alive and had appeared unto them, [38] did not believe them: 3752 and these sayings were before their eyes as the sayings of madness. [39] [Arabic, p. 203] 3753 And after that, he appeared to two of them, on that day, and while they were going to the village which was named Emmaus, and whose distance [40] from Jerusalem was sixty furlongs, 3754 3755 And they were talking the one of them with the [41] other of all the things which had happened. 3756 And during the time of their talking and [42] inquiring with one another, Jesus came and reached them, and walked with them. 3757 But [43] their eyes were

---

3734 Matt. xxviii. 11b.
3735 The Vat. ms. has a form that is distinctively plural. The Borg. ms. uses, with a plural adjective, the form found in § 52.
3736 43. In the next verse the relation of the mss. is reversed.
3737 Matt. xxviii. 12.
3740 Matt. xxviii. 15.
3741 John xx. 18.
3742 Matt. xxviii. 8b.
3743 The word first is less correctly spelled in Borg. ms.
3744 The Vat. ms. omits women and to inform his disciples.
3745 Informis dual and masc. in the ms., while the other verbs and pronouns are plural and feminine.
3746 The Vat. ms. omits women and to inform his disciples.
3747 Matt. xxviii. 9.
3748 Matt. xxviii. 10.
3749 Luke xvi. 10b.
3750 Luke xxiv. 10.
3751 Luke xvi. 11.
3754 Lit. mils.
3756 Luke xxiv. 15.
3757 Luke xxiv. 16.
sealed that they should not know him. 3758 And he said unto them, What are these sayings which ye address the one of you to the other, as ye walk and are [44] sad? 3759 One of them, whose name was Cleopas, answered and said unto him, Art thou perchance alone a stranger to Jerusalem, since thou knowest not what was in [45] it in these days? He said unto them, What was? 3760 They said unto him, Concerning Jesus, he who was from Nazareth, a man who was a prophet, and powerful in [46] speech and deeds before God and before all the people: 3761 and the chief priests and [47] the elders delivered him up to the sentence of death, and crucified him. 3762 But we supposed that he was the one who was to deliver Israel. And since all [48] things happened there have passed three days. 3765 But certain women of us also [49] informed us that they had come to the sepulchre; 3766 and when they found not his body, they came and told us that they had seen there the angels, and they [50] said concerning him that he was alive. 3768 And some of us also went to the sepulchre, and [51] found the matter as the women had said: only they saw him not. 3769 Then said Jesus [52] unto them, Ye lacking in discernment, and heavy in heart to believe! 3770 Was it not in all the sayings of the prophets that the Messiah was to suffer these things, and to [53] enter into his Glory? 3771 And he began from Moses and from all the prophets, [54] and interpreted to them concerning himself from all the scriptures. 3772 And they drew near unto the village, whither they were going: and he was leading them to [55] imagine that he was as if going to a distant region. 3773 And they pressed him, and said unto him, Abide with us: for the day hath declined now to the darkness. And he went [56] in to abide with them. 3775 And when he sat with them, he took bread, and blessed, [57] and brake, and gave to them. 3776 And straightway their eyes were opened, and they [58] knew him; and he was taken away from them, 3777 3778 And they said the one to the other, Was not our heart heavy within us, while he was speaking to us in the way, and interpreting to us the scriptures?

[59] 3779 And they rose in that hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven [60] gathered, and those that were with them, saying, 3780 Truly our Lord is risen, and hath [61] appeared to Simon.

3762 Borg. ms., to judgement and.
3764 Borg. ms. omits all.
3765 Luke xxiv. 22.
3766 Luke xxiv. 23.
3767 Masc. Plural.
3769 Luke xxiv. 25.
3771 Luke xxiv. 27.
3772 Luke xxiv. 28.
3773 Luke xxiv. 29.
3774 cf. § 50, 36, note.
3777 Vat. ms. omits this clause.
3778 Luke xxiv. 32.
3780 Luke xxiv. 34.
And they related what happened in the way, and how they knew him when he brake the bread. Neither believed they that also.

Section LIV.

[1] 3783 And while they talked together, 3784 the evening of that day arrived which was the First-day; and the doors were shut where the disciples were, because of the fear of the [2] Jews; 3785 and Jesus came and stood among them, and said unto them, Peace be with you: I am he; fear not. 3786 But they were agitated, and became afraid, and supposed that they [3] saw a spirit. 3787 Jesus said unto them, Why are ye agitated? and why do thoughts rise [4] [Arabic, p. 205] in your hearts? 3788 See my hands and my feet, that I am he: feel me, and know that a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me having that. [5] 3789 And when he had said this, he shewed them his hands and his feet and his side. 3790 And they were until this time unbelieving, from their joy and their wonder. He [7] said unto them, Have ye anything here to eat? 3791 And they gave him a portion of broiled fish and of honey. 3792 And he took it, and ate before them.

[8] 3793 And he said unto them, These are the sayings which I spake unto you, while I was with you, that everything must be fulfilled, which is written in the law of [9] Moses, and the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. 3794 Then opened he their [10] heart, that they might understand the scriptures; and he said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it is necessary 3795 that the Messiah suffer, and rise from among the dead on the third day; and that repentance unto the forgiveness of sins be preached in his name among all the peoples; and the beginning shall be from Jerusalem. 3796 And [13] ye shall be witnesses of that. And I send unto you the promise of my...
And when the disciples heard that, they were glad. And Jesus said unto them again, [15] Peace be with you: as my Father hath sent me, I also send you. And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said unto them, Receive ye the Holy Spirit: [16] and if ye forgive sins to any man, they shall be forgiven him; and if ye retain them against any man, they shall be retained.

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Thama, was not there with the disciples [18] when Jesus came. The disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen our Lord. But he said unto them, If I do not see in his hands the places of the nails, and put on them my fingers, and pass my hand over his side, I will not believe.

And after eight days, on the next First-day, the disciples were assembled again within, and Thomas with them. And Jesus came, the doors being shut, and stood [20] in the midst, and said unto them, Peace be with you. And he said to Thomas, Bring hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and bring hither [21] thy hand, and spread it on my side: and be not unbelieving, but believing. Thomas [22] answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus said unto him, Now since thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen me, and have believed.

And many other signs did Jesus before his disciples, and they are they which [24] are written also are that ye may believe in Jesus the Messiah, the Son of God; and that when ye have believed, ye may have in his name eternal life.

And after that, Jesus shewed himself again to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias; [26] and he shewed himself unto them thus. And there were together Simon Cephas, and Thomas which was called Twin, and Nathanael who was of Cana of Galilee, [27] and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of the disciples. Simon Cephas said unto them, I go to catch fish. They said unto him, And we also come with thee. And they went forth, and went up into the boat; and in that night they caught nothing. [28] And when the morning arrived, Jesus stood on the shore of the sea: but the disciples [29] knew not that it was Jesus. And Jesus said unto them, Children, have ye anything [30] to eat? They said unto him, No. He said unto them, Cast your net from the right side: and they shall be filled. They that had been catching fish were not able to carry their net.
side of the boat, and ye shall find. But and they threw, and they were not able [31] to draw the net for the abundance of the fish that were come into it. And that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Cephas, This is our Lord. And Simon, when he heard that it was our Lord, took his tunic, and girded it on his waist (for he was [32] naked), and cast himself into the sea to come to Jesus. But some others of the disciples came in the boat (and they were not far from the land, but about two [33] [Arabic, p. 207] hundred cubits), and drew that net of fish. And when they went up on the [34] land, they saw live coals laid, and fish laid thereon, and bread. And Jesus [35] said unto them, Bring of this fish which ye have now caught. Simon Cephas therefore went up, and dragged the net to the land, full of great fish, a hundred and fifty-three [36] fishes: and with all this weight that net was not rent. And Jesus said unto them, Come and sit down. And no man of the disciples dared to ask him who he was, for they knew that it was our Lord. But he did not appear to them in his own [37, 38] form. And Jesus came, and took bread and fish, and gave unto them. This is the third time that Jesus appeared to his disciples, when he had risen from among the dead.

[39] And when they had breakfasted, Jesus said to Simon Cephas, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me more than these? He said unto him, Yea, my Lord; thou [40] knowest that I love thee. Jesus said unto him, Feed for me my lambs. He said unto him again a second time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? He said unto him, Yea, my Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He said unto him, Feed for [41] me my sheep. He said unto him again the third time, Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? And it grieved Cephas that he said unto him three times, Lovest thou me? He said unto him, My Lord, thou knowest everything; thou knowest that I [42] love thee. Jesus said unto him, Feed for me my sheep. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast a child, thou didst gird thy waist for thyself, and go whither [Arabic, p. 208] thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch out thy hands, and another shall gird thy waist, and take thee whither thou wouldest not. And he said that to him to explain by what death he was to glorify God. And when he [44] had said that, he said unto him, Come after me. And Simon Cephas turned, and saw that disciple whom Jesus loved following him; he which at the supper leaned [45] on Jesus’ breast, and said, My Lord, who is it that betrayeth thee? When therefore

3823 So Peshitta. Vat. ms. has a form that might possibly be a corruption of take.
3824 Or, were taken.
3825 John xxi. 7.
3826 John xxi. 8.
3827 Vat. ms. adds unto Jesus.
3828 John xxi. 9.
3829 John xxi. 10.
3830 John xxi. 11.
3831 John xxi. 12.
3832 John xxi. 13.
3834 John xxi. 15.
3835 John xxi. 16.
3836 Lit. rams.
3837 John xxi. 17.
3838 John xxi. 18.
3839 Lit. ewes. For the three words cf. Peshitta and Sinaitic.
3840 John xxi. 19.
3841 John xxi. 20.
3842 cf. § 45, 3, note.
3843 John xxi. 21.
Cephas saw him, he said to Jesus, My Lord, and this man, what shall be in his [46] case? 3845 Jesus said unto him, If I will that this man remain until I come, what is [47] that to thee? follow thou me. 3846 And this word spread among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: but Jesus said not that he should not die; but, If I will that this man remain until I come, what is that to thee? 3847 This is the disciple which bare witness of that, and wrote it: and we know that his witness is true.

Section LV.

[1] 3848 But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus had appointed them. 3849 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but there were of [3] them who doubted. 3850 And while they sat there he appeared to them again, and upbraided them for their lack of faith and the hardness of their hearts, those that saw him when he was risen, and believed not. 3851 This is the disciple which bare witness of that, and wrote it: and we know that his witness is true.

[4] [Arabic, p. 209] Then said Jesus unto them, I have been given all authority in heaven and earth; and as my Father hath sent me, so I also send you. 3852 Go now into all the world, and preach my gospel in all the creation; 3853 and teach all the peoples, and baptize them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit; 3854 and teach them to keep all whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you all the days, unto the end of the world. 3855 For whosoever believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but [9] whosoever believeth not shall be rejected. 3856 And the signs which shall attend those that believe in me are these: that they shall cast out devils in my name; and they shall speak with new tongues; 3857 and they shall take up serpents, and if
they drink deadly poison, \textsuperscript{3862} it shall not injure them; and they shall lay their hands on the diseased, \textsuperscript{11} and they shall be healed. \textsuperscript{3863} But ye, abide in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be clothed with power from on high.

\textsuperscript{[12]} \textsuperscript{3864} And our Lord Jesus, after speaking to them, took them out to Bethany: and he \textsuperscript{13} lifted up his hands, and blessed them. \textsuperscript{3865} And while he blessed them, he was separated from them, and ascended into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. \textsuperscript{[14, 15]} \textsuperscript{3866} And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: \textsuperscript{3867} and at all times they were in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

\textsuperscript{[16]} \textsuperscript{3868} And from thence they went forth, and preached in every place; and our Lord helped them, and confirmed their sayings by the signs which they did.\textsuperscript{3869}

\textsuperscript{[17]} \textsuperscript{3870} And here are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they were written every one of them, not even the world, according to my opinion, would contain the books which should be written.\textsuperscript{3871}

---

Subscriptions.

I. In Borgian \textit{MS}.

\textit{Here} endeth the Gospel which Tatianus compiled and named \textit{Diatessaron}, i.e., The Fourfold, a compilation from the four Gospels of the holy Apostles, the excellent Evangelists (peace be upon them). It was translated by the excellent and learned priest, Abu’l Faraj ‘Abdulla ibn-at-Tayyib\textsuperscript{3872} (may God grant him favour), from Syriac into Arabic, from an exemplar written by ‘Isa\textsuperscript{3873} ibn-‘Ali al-Motatabbib,\textsuperscript{3874} pupil of Honain ibn-Ishak (God have mercy on them both). Amen.

---

\textsuperscript{3862} The Arabic translator renders it \textit{the poison of death}.
\textsuperscript{3863} Luke xxiv. 49b.
\textsuperscript{3864} Mark xvi. 19a; Luke xxiv. 50.
\textsuperscript{3865} Luke xxiv. 51; Mark xvi. 19c.
\textsuperscript{3866} Luke xxiv. 52.
\textsuperscript{3867} Luke xxiv. 53.
\textsuperscript{3868} Mark xvi. 20.
\textsuperscript{3869} \textit{cf.} Peshitta.
\textsuperscript{3870} John xxi. 25.
\textsuperscript{3871} In the Borg. \textit{MS} the text ends on folio 353a. On folios 354a-355a are found the genealogies, with the title, \textit{Book of the Generation of Jesus}, that of Luke following that of Matthew without any break. Ciasca has told us nothing of the nature of the text. The Subscription follows on folio 355\textit{b}.
\textsuperscript{3872} See note 1 to Introductory Note in Borg. \textit{MS}. (above, p. 42).
\textsuperscript{3873} \textit{MS}., by misplacing the diacritical signs, has \textit{Ghobasi}.
\textsuperscript{3874} The \textit{MS} has \textit{Mottayyib}; but Ciasca, in an additional note inserted after the volume was printed, gives the correct form.
2. In Vatican ms.\textsuperscript{3875}

*Here* endeth, by the help of God, the holy Gospel that Titianus compiled from the four Gospels, which is known as *Diatessaron*. And praise be to God, as he is entitled to it and lord of it! And to him be the glory for ever.

\textsuperscript{3875} The Arabic text of this Subscription is given by Ciasca in his essay, *De Tatiani Diatessaron arabica Versione*, in I. B. Pitra’s *Analecta Sacra*, tom. iv., p. 466.